

TWENTIETH-CENTURY  
CHINESE SERVICEWOMEN

# 二十世纪中国女兵

献给 1995 年世界妇女大会

Dedicated to the World Conference on Women in 1995



## 前 言

1995年，百年世纪已经剩下它的最后5年了。

站在世纪之交的门槛上回眸、凝望和思索，我发现本世纪中国人群中变化最大的群体是我们自己、妇女，这个变化可以用天翻地覆来形容，在这个天翻地覆中，我看到了我们自己、妇女和我们的女兵。中国女兵是中国妇女争取自身独立、解放及奋斗的先锋和历史缩影。考察这段历史，我们不回避童养媳那一双双忍辱含泪的目光；不能回避少女缠足折断趾骨时那一声声凄凉绝望的叫喊；同时，我们也听到了军校的集合号音；听到了那发自内心的《娘子军连歌》；看到了那丢下婴儿追赶队伍的女兵；以及铁窗里还在书写“革命必胜”的女杰……

中国女兵在她的成立之初，不是一个职业的概念，也不是被人强迫的应证。她是受封建制度压迫的中国女性觉醒的产物。她们要做自己的主人，她们要聚集力量，她们要动员更多的姐妹起来推翻那个黑暗的、将女性压在最低层的社会。

她们组成了一支独具特色的方队。20世纪用惊异的目光看着她们，那是一种中国女性从未有过的姿态、从未有过的色彩……

## PREFACE

By 1995 the 100-year-long century has only five more years left.

Standing on the threshold of two centuries meeting each other and casting a meditative backward glance, I find that the group that has undergone the greatest changes among the Chinese masses of people in the present century is that of women. The word "earthshaking" may be used to describe these changes, wherein I see us ourselves, women and our servicewomen. The Chinese servicewomen are the vanguard and the epitome of the Chinese women's struggle for independence and emancipation. While examining the history of this period, we cannot evade the tearful and helpless looks of the child brides; we cannot evade the plaintive and hopeless cries of the young girls suffering from phalanxes being broken through foot-binding; at the same time we hear the bugle call for-in in the military academies; we hear the Company Anthem of the Women's Detachment sung from the bottom of their hearts; we see the servicewomen laying aside their babies to catch up with the troops; and we see the heroines writing "The revolution is bound to succeed!" even behind prison bars.....

When first established, the force of the Chinese servicewomen did not mean a new occupation or any forced enlistment. Rather it was the outcome of the awakening of the Chinese women who, long oppressed by the feudal system, were now determined to be their own masters, to gather their strength, and to mobilize more of their sisters to rise up and overthrow the dark society that had always kept them at the bottom.

They formed a unique formation. The twentieth century gazed at them with amazed looks, for it was a kind of gesture and color never before shown by the Chinese women.

## 二十世纪中国女兵

## A 章 千年压迫和世纪的跨越

### 大革命时期和红军时期的女兵(1927—1937)

## 1 一个大写的“W”在中国的震动

1927年2月12日，武昌两湖书院大草坪上，气氛肃穆异常。就黄埔军校来说，这是它的第六期学员的开学典礼。不同以往的是，与4000多名男性军人一起通过检阅的将有一队穿军装的女兵。国民党中央党部和国民政府有关部门负责人宋庆龄、吴玉章，国民党湖北省党部及武汉市党部代表董必武、詹大悲等300多位要员作为嘉宾出席了开学典礼。

当主席台的嘉宾把他们庄严的注目礼撒向这个双袖配有红色“W”标志的女兵方队时，全场都沸腾了。这是开天辟地的创举，是革命军刺向封建营垒的一支锋利之剑。这批女兵共130名，她们是中国现代史上的第一批女兵。

“W”是英文妇女“WOMAN”的缩写。以此作为女兵服装的标志，本身象征着一种开放的新潮。尽管它带有舶来文化的味道。

而这个“W”的出现，在社会上和女兵们的家庭中却引发了不亚于12级台风似的强烈撼。

一个年轻的妇女抱着孩子投考中央军校的消息成了轰动武汉的新闻。她叫王亦侠，此刻她已经顾不得自己成了什么“人物”，也顾不得报纸上那些不堪入目的讽刺、谩骂和讥笑。她必须尽快安置好孩子，因为带着孩子上军校毕竟是不可能的。有人告诉她，天主教收小孩。她抱着孩子去了。神父说：“孩子可以收下，但以后孩子就不属你，而属于上帝。”年轻的母亲诧异了：“哪有这样的事，母亲参加了革命，却把孩子送给了上帝！”她抱着孩子扭头就走了。后来，她找到一个洋车夫家，把孩子寄养在那里，去军校报到了。

她的同学黄杰也遇到了意想不到的窘境。她剪了一个当时被称做“陆军头”的短发，照了张女战士照片寄回家，本想得到家中亲人的支持，却被伯父骂做“家族的败类”，“太伤风化”！开钱庄的叔伯祖父专门托人给她带信，不准她走自家门前那条街。

还有一位女学员，寄往家中一封“平安信”，亲友们迫切想知道这位外出考学女子的归宿，谁知信还没有念完，她的母亲就昏倒在地。当女兵就如当强盗，老太太嘴里木讷道：“这样的姑娘将来嫁给谁呢！”

### 1. 黄埔军校武汉分校开学典礼（1927年）

### 2. 武汉分校女生大队全体合影（1927年）

女兵们不曾参战，就先引发了“战争”。这场“战争”的冲击波大有把她们及她们的家庭毁灭之势。

中国的封建社会沉积2000年，早已给女人格式化的定位。大家庭的女子只有两个称呼：未结婚者谓之“小姐”；结婚者谓之“太太”。下作的女子，有“女佣”、“奶娘”、“妓女”等，在这个规范的词典里，唯独没有“女兵”两字。中国历史上有记载的习武女子是商王的一个妃，名妇好，武艺虽高强，但她的功夫也只是博商王一笑罢了。文艺作品中的穆桂英、樊梨花、花木兰，尽管率兵出征，仗打得漂亮，也只供民间茶楼、戏台传唱，逍遥娱乐，而不见正史经传。太平天国时期洪秀全曾领导一支有十万之众的女兵，

她们的首领勇猛豪爽的“过男儿”洪天娇，在社会公行的词典里，只是“强盗”、“女贼”的代名词。史学家们只能依据当时清政府的《贼情汇纂》来摸清她们的编制，估算她们的人马。这支庞大的巾帼之旅最终消逝在 19 世纪中国封建势力强大的围剿中。

今天的女兵与都市的职业妇女已为人们司空见惯，而本世纪初期中国妇女的大家风范则是“纤纤素手”，“三寸金莲”，“笑不露齿”，她们大多身锁春闺，“大门不出，二门不迈”。婚姻完全操纵在家长之手，必须遵守“父母之命，媒妁之言”。中国民间还流传“好男不当兵，好铁不打钉”之说。更何况被压在父权、夫权、族权、神权等全部封建宗法思想和制度之下的妇女已经达近 2000 年之久了呢！

社会像是成心要给这些新女性点颜色看的。

不久，武汉的街头又暴出了一桩更大的新闻：百名妇女裸体游行，标榜是军校的女学员。沿街的姑娘、媳妇都用手捂住了眼睛，流氓、黑帮吹着口哨，吐着唾沫：“她们是啥子军校学员，是花楼街的妓女！是婊子！”终于有人认出了她们。被右翼分子雇佣妓女冒充女兵的丑剧故意要把天空搅浑，以侮辱这些第一群向封建社会挑战的新女性。

中国女兵在这样的环境中诞生了。她们脱下了小姐服装，擦去了脸上的胭脂，穿上了灰布军衣，黑布袜子，裹上灰布绑腿，腰系一寸多宽的皮带，一顶灰布军帽，盖住了满头的秀发。这批女兵大部分是来自湖南、四川、河南的女学生，她们中很多人是瞒着家庭偷偷报名的。

虽然这支未经训练的队伍，步履还有些散乱，虽然她们略带稚气的脸上还挂着昨天的泪水，但在这一刻，她们似一下子成熟了。她们不再是普通的少女、少妇，她们是女兵了。其中年龄最小的曾希平，家人送她到长沙桑蚕学校读书，她却悄悄投考了军校。

对她们来说，这不仅是一次对以往女性生活的彻底告别，也是对未来命运的严峻考验。女兵的未来，在当时无任何坐标可寻，而逾越封建制度的戒律受惩罚的实例却比比皆是……

几天前为了剪辫子，她们中的一些人也经历了一番思想斗争呢。四川来的女生，考取了 28 个。要入伍了，总得做些准备。“衣服是一定要换的！几千男兵都穿军装，总不能让女兵穿旗袍啊！”童幼芝说话时，总爱把她的短发往脑后一甩。游曦见童幼芝甩头发的动作，说：“还有些人的毛辫子恐怕也该剪掉了”。江慎初说：“说起剪辫子，在四川曾为此大闹风潮，县太爷还下令禁止。今天我们可以任意剪掉了。可又有人舍不得……”说着，她用眼睛望了望陈德芸，陈德芸低着头，拉着她毛辫子在手上挽圈圈。自古长发就是女人的标志，且不说多少文人赞美它，打她记事起，街坊邻居夸她，都是从这头秀发说起。没有了辫子会是什么样，她实在无法想象。陈德芸还在犹豫，段惠芸已经拿出一把剪刀，说：“我先剪，谁来替我剪？”一瞬间，一条一条的辫子被剪下来。陈德芸的辫子也终于被剪掉了，她剪发的时候，眼圈是红的，她强忍着不让自己哭出来，但还是洒了几颗留恋的泪珠。

### 3. 女生队指导员钟复光（1927 年）

当中国历史将女兵推向舞台时，是有准备的。

中国民主革命的先驱、中华民国政府非常大总统孙中山先生倡导的妇女

解放观已深深根植在他的民主革命纲领和他所领导的民主革命中。办女子学校、提倡妇女参政、反对包办婚姻、反对缠足已为城镇的时尚。孙先生亲自介绍何香凝、秋瑾女士加入他领导的同盟会，使她们成为坚强的革命战士和杰出的妇女运动领袖。

总统夫人宋庆龄女士，更是贯彻孙先生革命纲领的先锋战士。1926年她随北伐军到达当时的革命中心武汉，即同14名共产党人和国民党左派领袖组成“中国国民党中央执行委员及国民政府委员临时联席会议”作为迁都前的临时党政最高权力机关，同时她还牵头同邓演达等13人组成国民党中央政治会议武汉分会并兼该会委员。她在汉口四维路5号为革命妇女创立了第一个政治训练班，亲任主任，培养妇女干部，动员妇女参加国民革命。这个训练班，实际上是妇女国民革命军的预备队，它的目标是“团结全国乃至全世界的妇女成一个革命的大同盟”。同时，她与何香凝一起组织红十字会，发动慰问伤兵运动和策划战时救济工作，亲自电请苏俄工联全国理事会发动各工联团体救济武汉伤兵。

革命的大潮也为女子武装的诞生准备了优秀的干部。1918年与向警予一起组织“湖南女子留法勤工俭学会”的蔡畅，已经从法国的巴黎和苏联的莫斯科学习回国。她与何香凝一起领导了广东的妇女运动，刚刚卸去中共两广区委妇委书记的职务，亲任国民革命军政治部法文翻译兼宣传科长。参加过“五四”运动，在天津组织妇女、学生联合会，天津女权运动同盟会的邓颖超已经度过了她的学生时代，成熟地转任中共天津地委妇女部长、两广区委委员兼妇女部长。

军校所在地是清末洋务派首领张之洞创办的两湖书院旧址。这是国共两党合作创办的中央军事政治学校（又称黄埔军校）武汉分校。黄埔军校是孙中山先生在广州黄埔岛创立的。时在1924年6月16日。由它培养的黄埔师生此时已成功地进行两次对反动军阀的东征，统一了广东革命根据地，随后，又进行了北伐战争。1926年10月北伐军攻占武汉后，政治家们在规划分校的蓝图时加了一个大写的“W”——招收革命军第一批女兵。

#### 4. 宋庆龄在汉口检阅北伐革命军（1927年元旦）

军校的招生简章被刊登在当时的主要报纸上。全国引起了很大的反响。仅长沙一地，报名者就有千人。其势已大大超过古语“一呼百应”。

学员必须经过严格考试。军校考试的场面是降重的，作弊被当场取消资格。

湖南考生的录取比例是：100：1。发榜之后，那些落榜的人把省党部包围了，她们为自己没有被录取而感到不公平。省党部不得不责成有关人员把试卷公开，让落榜的人派代表查核，证实考卷是密封的，只编号码，不写姓名，凭卷面成绩评分，绝无换卷舞弊等等，才平息了这场风波。

#### 5. 何香凝（1957年）

南方初春的阳光，把两湖书院的大操场晒得暖洋洋的，操练的女兵们的军装早被汗水浸湿了。她们为达到队列中每步的距离是75公分，而不停的抬腿、挥臂；不仅如此，她们还要把吃饭的时间准确地把握在10分钟之内。初



期，很多女兵不习惯，那样狼吞虎咽地吃饭，在家里也是不成体统的，何况是当着众人的面。然而，军纪如山。10分钟一到，必须放下碗筷。因此，达不到要求而吃不饱肚子的女兵还不止一个呢。但她们知道这是一个士兵必须要经过的磨练。

她们的基础理论学习也正规得与男性士兵毫无二致。《步兵操典》、《射击教范》、《军中勤务令》……参加军事演习。听恽代英讲工人运动、学生运动和无产阶级的历史地位；听沈雁冰讲妇女解放；听许德珩讲《共产主义ABC》。学校还经常邀请有关方面负责人和著名人士到校讲课或讲演。毛泽东曾被特邀作两湖农民运动的讲演。宋庆龄、郭沫若、吴玉章、董必武等也应邀来校讲演，这些军校学员们的良师益友，使女兵们洞见了一个前所未有的精神天地。

#### 6. 蔡畅在第一次政协第二次会议上（1950年）

历史像是故意要考验这批勇敢的女性。还等她们毕业，战争便向她们袭来。

#### 7. 邓颖超、周恩来与天津进步青年团体觉悟社成员（1920年）

1927年5月，驻宜昌的独立14师师长夏斗寅叛变，与四川军阀杨森勾结，沿长江两岸向武汉进攻。军校学员和农民运动讲习所的学员编成中央独立师，归第11军第24师师长叶挺统一指挥。此时，叶挺已是北伐名将，他率领的部队被称为“铁军”。女兵们个个以成为他麾下的一员而感到幸运和自豪。叶师长在战前动员时说：“从今天起，你们就不再是中央军校的学生了。你们已经是正规军，是中央独立师的士兵了。你们应该勇敢坚强，担负起当前的革命重任。”

#### 8. 孙中山、宋庆龄在广州（1924年元旦）

这位30多岁军事指挥员的讲演，像他的年龄一样，年轻而充满活力。当他把目光转向队伍中的女兵时，他发现她们坚定沉稳的表情，已经足以令人信赖。他向这些陌生而散发着女性独特气息的队列说：女兵的任务也很重，你们不但要拿枪打敌人，还要做唤起民众的工作，这就是要搞宣传，另外还要担任救护。他要求女兵们都争做用笔、用嘴、用实际行动干革命闯将。

#### 9. 叶挺率领的铁军符号（1926年）

这是一种她们从未经历过的生活。虽然她们没有上阵地与敌人厮杀，但却让她们真切地领略了什么是真正的兵。女兵们被编成宣传队和救护队，从纸坊打到土地堂，向嘉鱼、蒲圻、咸宁、新堤地区攻击前进。她们收拾被叛军毁坏的城镇村庄，刷标语、发传单，帮助百姓重返家园。她们或在街头讲演；或挨家挨户宣传；或帮助群众恢复农会、妇女协会等。每天都是那么生动、那么与众不同。部队开进途中，女兵们经常不能按时吃饭，她们渴了，喝口山涧中的水；饿了，没有饭吃，就紧紧腰带。没有人掉队。夜晚在山头

露宿，她们下铺军毯上盖雨衣。5月的南方，正值梅雨季节，地上潮湿，空气寒冷，凌晨起来，不仅军毯可以拧出水来，姑娘们的头发都湿透了。女兵黄静汶，脚底板磨起了血泡，一停下来，两腿疼痛得不能举步，她发现，很多人都与她一样，有趣的是大家都不吭声，也许是担心把痛苦传染给其他的姐妹吧。几天后，大家都视脚底打泡为平常事了，便互相打趣、取笑。女兵游曦还捉到了一个探听部队军情、外号叫“活阎王”的土豪。一个多月的征途生活，把几个月前还是娇娇弱弱、斯斯文文的女同学，锻炼成了体质健壮、意志坚强、能承受艰苦的女战士了。

#### 10. 军校女生张瑞华（1938年）

女学员谢冰莹在随军西征时，写了《从军日记》，在当时的《中央日报》副刊发表，引起轰动。她写道：“女同学们，谁都瞒着家庭，瞒着学校，偷偷地去投考军校”，“我相信，那时女同学去当兵的动机，十有八九是为了想脱离封建家庭的压迫，和找寻自己出路的；可是等到穿上军服，拿起枪杆，思想又不同了，那时谁不把完成国民革命，建立富强的中国的担子，放在自己的肩上的呢？”

革命军在土地堂打败了夏斗寅部。女生队随军西征归来，当时的湖北省妇女协会向她们赠了一面锦旗，上书：“开历史新纪元”。

大革命失败后，中央军校决定提前结业。像她们当初入伍一样，没有人给她们任何的许诺。唯一可以证实的是她们已无法还原过去的自己了。女兵像一块胎记似的印在她们的生命中，几十年过去了，她们中的很多人又参加过南昌起义、广州起义和长征，有的还上了敌人法庭和监狱，有了更为丰富的经历和体验，但她们仍然不能忘记军校这段短暂的生活和战斗。因为，这是她们漫长人生中最有意义的一个序言。

#### 11. 武汉分校女生队毕业证书

##### 2 她们在入伍前没有姓名

中国的女性在过去没地位和没人格，是没有贫富之分的。我不仅读到的是这样的历史，更听到许多真实的故事。

一个6岁的女孩要离开家，到一个陌生的人家去生活。她哭了。她不愿意离开家，离开她的爹、她的娘、她朝夕相处的姊妹。她娘摸着她的头哄着说：“咱家女孩多，吃的又不好。人家没有女孩，很喜欢女孩，你去是到人家做女儿的。”她被人家领走了。一路哭，一路扭着脖子望着家，直到那条长长的路把她家的茅屋遮住了。

到了娘说的“给人做女儿”的家，她发现人家早有三个女孩呢。婆家的姐姐说：“你还不知道，你是给我弟弟当老婆的！”她又哭了。

从此，许多繁重的劳动落在她这个6岁的小姑娘身上。

她要去砍柴，砍了不会捆，捆上又挑不起，这就要挨打。

她要去打水，大盆的水端不动，也要挨打。

她要背比她大一岁的孩子，把孩子摔着了，就更要挨打了。

那个比她大四岁的未婚夫嫌衣服洗得不净，竟揪着她的辫子打。

没有法子，她只好逃回娘家去。可是，自己的亲娘也不得不打她几下，再把她送回来。

12.担任红二方面军组织部部长的李贞和她的警卫员杨德秀（1935年）

13.全国第一次苏维埃代表大会之工农红军妇女代表团，后排左起：康克清、钱细、周月林、贺子珍、前排左起：曾碧、彭儒（1931年）

她被打得身上青一块紫一块。

她满肚的委屈，到哪里去申诉啊！

她只有和近处的几个童养媳在一起打柴、打草时，说上一场，哭上一场。可哭有什么用呢！她家姐妹6个，都是这样送给人家的。周围的女孩也是同样，有的比她的年龄还小。

年复一年，日复一日，岁月在她的眼里就像一幅没头也找不到尾的画，很小的时候，她看这幅画是有色的，渐渐地色彩暗淡了，几乎是一片漆黑。她上山背柴用的木挂钩都磨得发亮了。6岁的小姑娘也长成19岁的大姑娘了。可她对外界仍然知道得很少。

一天，她的姐姐跑来悄悄告诉她，本地建立了妇女组织，是干革命的。她说不出“革命”的意思，但仿佛意识到这会给自己的命运带来一些改变。她去了。又从那里参加了红军，当了女兵，她第一次有了自己的名字。在这以前，她只知道人家喊她“旦娃子”。

1955年，新中授予的千余名将军中，她成为唯一的女将军。她就是李贞。

14.红军女工兵营长林月琴

李贞的传奇经历让今天的孩子们听来，已近乎天方夜谭了。然而“童养媳”这个女性屈辱的标记就是这样实实在在地印在女将军的履历中。

要理解李贞，理解红军中的女兵，就一定要弄清楚什么是童养媳。因为它是造就这位中国女将军的最初的生命源头。

原以为童养媳是一个不复杂的话题。顾名思义，无非是像李贞那样在童年时期就开始给人家当媳妇了。可她们当年是怎么到人家去的，是来人接的？还是自己去的？顺手拿起电话给一位曾经是童养媳的女兵前辈打了过去。没想到，这个电话延续了一个小时，第二天又延续了一个小时。

终于明白，关于中国的童养媳制度是可以写一本书的。南北方、贫富家各不相同。怎么送去的都有，有一出生就让人抱走的；有几个月送人的；有几岁去的；也有十几岁去的……普及的程度难以想象。

15.长征后红军部分女干部，左起：陈琼英、蔡畅、夏明、刘英。

“我出身书香门第，也照样做了人家的童养媳。那时候不把女孩子当亲骨肉的，就像一块馒头，不想吃，一扔。”电话中的对方，已近古稀之年，说这话已无脾气，但童年的阴影仍挥之不去。她说，那天电话之后，一夜没睡好。童年的女孩一个个都活生生地站在面前：“我伯母的弟弟的童养媳，每天都去我们那个学校找洗衣服的活，她的哥哥姐姐也在学校里读书，他们

见面都不说话的。也没有觉得脸面有什么不好的。童养媳嘛！可他们之间也不来往。嫁出去的人，泼出去的水。一件衣服也就几分钱呀。”

我们的关于童养媳的电话，像连续剧似的发展着，每一幕都令人意想不到：“你知道女孩被溺死的事吗？”

“知道，是放在水里溺的吧。”总算有了想象，水中的女婴，不曾挣扎就没有了生命的女婴。

“不对。是用尿溺死的。我们浙江有两种马桶，一种是尿桶，比较低，一种是尿桶比较高，大约有现在的茶几那么高，能装几十斤尿。大都是放在床后面的。产妇生下来，看是女的，不想要，当时就往床后的马桶里一按，用尿溺死。不是用水溺死的。那时也不知溺死了多少女孩子。想想，我算是幸运的。”

“打童养媳也是有专门的工具的。”这时的脑子已经近乎空白了。不得不放下电话去找笔，请她慢些说。

“那是一种用竹皮蔑成片绑在一起的东西。打在身上非常疼，不过只有外伤而不致内伤。打服而不打死、找残。日后还是自家的媳妇。我就挨过打，现在都忘不了那个滋味。”

“跑呀，为什么不跑呀？”

“有跑的。我中学时的一个女同学就和老师私自好了，她可真是勇敢呀。后来，他们先后生了两个女孩，婆婆根本不照面，不理她。第一个孩子刚生下来就送人了。自己像半娼妓似的。第二个孩子也是这样。到最后生了儿子，才把她接回家，承认了她。”

那个时代，每渴望自由的女孩子的心里都有这种沉甸甸的忧伤。

## 16. 红四方面军女炊事员帮助战士补衣服

当通第三次电话的时候已经是 1995 年春节后的一个晚上。

“我又给你找到了童养媳的资料。”又是那个前辈。她如此认真。“你知道肖望东吧。有名的将军。一篇关于他的文章中有这样的记载：一个女孩 4 岁到他家里当童养媳，他参加革命走的时候，那个女孩还小，无法圆房，但以后一直在家侍奉他的母亲，直到 1947 年他母亲病故，家里穷得没钱办丧事，她把自己卖了，买了棺材和寿衣，安葬了老人。这是个孝顺的童养媳把自己卖给了一个外号叫黑门神的男人。这个丈夫经常打她、骂她，直到解放后肖将军回家乡，才帮她与那个男人解除了婚约。这是发生在我们时代的事，不知怎么，看了这个情节，我心里挺不是滋味，一个女人把自己当东西似的卖了。这事听起来好像离我们很遥远，像是明朝、清朝的事了。这篇文章在我这里，你什么时候来取都成。”

这是一篇美得动人的故事，也是一篇残忍得近乎自杀的故事。

人最惊讶的是自己。当把自己放大和延长了以后，就越发变得吃惊了。

打开的电视机正在播放‘95 半边天’妇女专题节目，服装模特儿在变幻的灯光下穿梭着……

今天的妇女话题，已经根本不用谈童养媳了。

但是我们必须记住女红军李贞她们的故事。那也是我们生命的源头呢。

“当红军首先是争取一个做人的地位。”在罗荣桓元帅的府邸，他的夫人这样说。林月琴曾任红军妇女工兵营营长。她今年80多岁了，耳不聋眼不花。战争对这位戎马一生的女军人来说，就像是在昨天。她的思绪被漫长的历史锤炼得清晰而有逻辑：“人，不是一个动物的概念。他（她）有血、有肉、有思想、有选择的权利，而中国的妇女，到在长达近2000年的历史中，她们就似一具有血、有肉而没有思想没有选择自由的动物。”她仔细询问了我的采访计划。叮嘱说：“不要把眼睛盯着首长的夫人，以为身份就是代表。我们很多女战士从年轻到死，都是普通的人。是她们为我们妇女争得了做人的权利。”

1927年，轰轰烈烈的大革命失败后，中国革命的中心由城市转入农村。革命的“星星之火”又在江西的井冈山燃烧起来。部分南昌起义和秋收起义的部队会师在这里，重新编制了一支武装，名曰：中国工农革命军，以后，又改名为中国工农红军。依靠这支武装，相继建立了江西井冈山根据地、湘赣根据地、川陕根据地和鄂豫皖根据地。

走进山区的红军仍然继续传播着大革命时期的真理，他们发动群众，建立苏维埃政府，建立妇女组织，办识字班，宣传妇女翻身解放。当时不仅红军的各级组织中有女兵，红军中的女军官还兼任地方政权的妇女干部。中国女兵队伍在这些贫瘠山工的发展是以后各个时期都无法比拟的。出现了独立的女兵班、排、连、营、团、师建制和有相应职务的女军官。人数最多达到近万名。

## 17. 红军战士康克清（哈尔多·汉森摄）

红军中，有相当数量的童养媳出身的女战士。她们有的是个别跑出来的，还有集体报名参军的。

林月琴形容当时的情景时说：一天，女战士刘百兴风风火火地跑进屋，兴奋地对我咕：“营长，张排长带回了一个连！你去看啊！”她一把拽着我便向门外跑。我出门一看，在夹道的人墙之中，张排长挺着胸膛、甩着大步在前面走着，后面跟着一群姑娘、媳妇。她们穿着补丁摞补丁的衣裳，有的梳髻，有的扎着独辫子，还有的带着项圈和手镯，步伐不齐，可走得很有精神。这是一支少见的队伍，招来了满街看热闹的人。张排长是专为扩红去的。她去的地点是恩阳河。那天正逢赶场，街上人山人海，许多都是背着背篓来卖山货的童养媳。张排长往桌上一站，还没开口，有的老乡就发现她是个女红军。可有的人不信，便在下面议论开了。张排长听到他们的议论，就说：“老乡们，我是个女红军。”桌前的几个小媳妇看她的穿着打扮和头上的短发和男同志完全一样，怀疑地望着她，一面笑一面摇头。她弯下腰让她们看自己戴耳环的耳朵眼，她们这才信了。大家都对这位女红军发生了兴趣。她便现身说法：“乡亲们，姐妹们！我是湖北黄安人。我父亲给财东当长工，累病了，我9岁那年他就死了。到我12岁我娘又死了。我哥哥养不起我，就把我送给人家当童养媳，和这里的童养媳一样，当牛做马，挨打受骂。红军一来，我就当了红军。在我们的队伍里，像我这样的童养出身的红军女战士多得很。如今，她们抬起头来，再也不受财东的剥削和公婆的打骂了。”她的话引起了在场许多童养媳的共鸣。当场就有十几个人报了名。到傍晚集合起了一支七八十人的队伍。当她领着她们回到德汉城时，全城都轰动了。我

们营一下子扩充到近 500 人。

### 18. 红军时期的康克清与贺子珍

凡是封建社会给妇女打上的痛苦烙印，都可以在红军女战士们的身上找到。与林月琴搭档的妇女工兵营政委王泽南，是一个“裹小脚”的女兵。小脚，就是被封建社会歌颂的所谓“三寸金莲”。史载，妇女的小脚可分成五种十八式。当时不仅有这种无聊的划分，还有“纤纤春笋香”一类的男人颂扬小脚。缠足是妇女被玩物化恶性发展的标志，它不仅使妇女失去劳动能力，而且使之成为依附于男子的精神枷锁。封建社会衍生出多少缠足妇女，我们不得而知，但那一幕幕缠足的惨景却令人心惊。10 只脚趾，硬要活活折断 8 只趾骨。这种人为的酷刑是要那些未成年的女孩来承受，否则，女孩长大了，那双大脚无论怎样缠裹，都不“美”了。当时大脚女人不仅终生受歧视，她们的婚姻也受到很大的影响。

王泽南不顾一切地要挣脱束缚在自己身上的枷锁。那时的工兵，与现在操作机械的工兵意义完全不同。那时的工兵，是工人和士兵的简称。既当工人，缝制军服，又当士兵，为前线运输口粮物资。红军没有汽车，牲口也很少，运输基本上是靠战士们两条腿。王泽南一双小脚，翻越了多少沟壑，趟过多少山涧，跨过多少战壕，她自己数不清了。人们赞扬她的奉献和牺牲。其实，她当时的念头很简单：再苦再累，终于像个人了。

### 3 通晓五国文字的红军女师长

向前进，  
向前进，  
战士的责任重，  
妇女的冤仇深，  
古有花木兰替父去从军，

今有娘子军扛枪为人民。

这支《红色娘子军连歌》，记述的是 65 年前发生在祖国南部岛屿的一支妇女武装的故事。中国的武装斗争史上，她只存在了两年。但人们仍然不能忘记那个牺牲的连长和那个战斗到最后一个人的部队。后来，这个故事被拍成了电影，娘子军重又被“复活”，成了一支家喻户晓的部队。

写女兵不能不写这支海岛的娘子军。她们成了中国女性自豪和荣誉的象征。全国解放后，毛泽东主席还亲自授予娘子军连第二任党代表冯增敏一支冲锋枪呢。

当我追寻到娘子军的故乡时，仍能感受到有着“天涯海角”之称的南海琼崖的古朴和苍劲。今天这个位于祖国辽阔疆土的最南部，已经独立成一个省，并成为开拓贸易的经济发展特区。尽管今天的海南与娘子军的时代不可同日而语，但在 7 年前，我第一次登上这个岛时，在亚热带独有的椰树林里，那些用椰树皮搭盖的没有电灯的居民屋，却深刻在我的脑海中。贫穷和美丽是这个岛屿不协调的两极。我们把历史的坐标再向前移，那里曾是蛮瘴僻远的荒滩，是朝廷充军发配的乱石岗，宋代大诗人、贬官苏轼曾被逐于此，

留下了著名的《减字木兰花》一词。到本世纪初，现代工业已在中国登陆，但人类文明之风，越过内陆吹到这里已成强弩之末。海岛虽已成汉、黎、苗、回等民族的聚集地，而与他们为生的刀耕火种式的原始生产方式却无大改变。大海召唤着琼崖的男子，生存迫使他们远涉重洋。中国早期的华工，很多诞生于此。

## 19. 海南岛的女赤卫队员

命运似乎在加倍锤炼这个贫瘠海岛的妇女。一年三季繁重的谷物播种、收割和全部的家务劳动都落在了羸弱的妇女肩头。然而，勤劳、独立的海南妇女并没有因此而享殊荣；相反，买卖妇女、吸毒、嫖娼等恶势力与贫瘠和落后一起使她们倍感压抑。这也许就是代表中国先进妇女的女兵队伍能在此开花，又很快凋谢的原因吧。

当年中国共产党在琼崖建立苏维埃政权时，获得了海岛人民的拥戴。生性大胆、粗犷的海南女子纷纷加入赤卫队、少先队，并要求参加红军。为了鼓励琼崖女子的参战热情，1930年中共琼崖特委和琼崖红军第二独立师从六七百名妇女中挑选了120名女青年，组成了女子军特务连，辖三个排，人称为娘子军。这是一支不脱离生产的部队。她们既要习武操练，又要耕田、收割，战时还能配合主力红军作战。1931年6月，她们与主力红军一起在沙耗岭打了一次漂亮的伏击战，活捉乐会县国民党“剿共”总指挥陈责苑，毙俘敌百余人，缴获一批枪支弹药，而娘子军无一伤亡，名声大振。

1932年娘子军已发展为两个连。同年8月广东军阀陈济堂为配合蒋介石的第四次反革命“围剿”，派兵大举进攻琼崖苏区，琼崖特委、琼崖机关在主力红军的掩护下向母瑞山转移。撤至马鞍岭时，敌军追至，娘子军第一连和红一营奉命阻击敌人。他们与敌人激战了三天三夜，阻击胜利。娘子军第一连奉命撤退。留下殿后的8名女兵在弹尽粮绝之后全部牺牲。娘子军第一连撤到母瑞山后，又遭敌重兵包围，激战数日，大部分战士牺牲和失散，连长冯增敏等8人被俘入狱。娘子军第二连原准备随红三团撤往六连岭，终因环境险恶在乐会县被打散，至此，娘子军解体。

## 20. 红军长征后的张琴秋（1936年）

历史并没有特意编排这个时刻。在海南娘子军悲壮消失的第二年，中国内陆的四川盆地，又崛起了一支红色的妇女武装。这支女兵队伍归属川陕根据地的红军第四方面军。后来她逐步发展为红军女兵人数最多、建制最全的一支部队。

1933年3月，在四川省通江县一个学校的操场上，举行了红四方面军总部直属妇女独立营成立大会。300多名身穿军装头戴五星军帽、身佩长短枪支和大刀的红军女战士，英姿飒爽，神采飞扬，整齐地排列在操场上。整个通江县城几乎都轰动了，学校的操场被围观的人群挤得水泄不通。四川是我国人口最多的一个省，每10个中国人中，就有一个是四川人。在四川看人并不新鲜。但这里的人还从没有见过女兵。人们都用惊奇的目光看着这群被称做“女娃子”的兵。两个月后，这些“女娃子”兵就打了胜仗。她们获得了

这次战斗的大部分的战利品。一年后，妇女独立营在四川的旺苍坝扩编为妇女独立团。部队发展到 2000 多人。

1935 年 2 月，妇女独立团又扩编为妇女独立师，下辖两个团。

师长何许人也？人们习惯地联想，应该是电影中的娘子军男性党代表洪常青。不是出于男尊女卑的念头，此时的中国女兵队伍毕竟还相当年轻啊！她们中有洪常青那样文武双全的人才吗？

时势造英雄。驾驭这支巾帼之旅的女性，的确文武双全。文，学贯中西，通晓五国文字；武，已有“五百农妇缴一团白军”的美喻。她叫张琴秋。

这是一个我们这个时代很陌生的名字。

让我们读读这位 31 岁的女兵师长兼第一团团长的经历：

## 21. 担任中国女子大学教育长的张琴秋（1939 年）

张琴秋，1904 年出生于浙江省崇德县石门镇一个书香之门。

石门镇是位于大运河畔的千年古镇。远在两千年前春秋战国时代，越国名将范蠡就曾驻军石门附近。古运河流经镇中，在商店鳞次栉比的闹市中心，转而向南，形成了一个大湾区。湾中流水清碧，宛若玉带。相传湾子上越国在此筑了一道石门，作为与吴交往的隘口。此镇固而得名。这里水网交叉，物产丰富，是江南的富庶之地。张琴秋的父亲曾任浙江嘉兴《三江日报》的编辑。他给女儿起名凤生，字琴秋，便是得意于“留得梧桐在，自有凤凰来”的诗句。别人费解，他曰：梧桐乃造琴之材，梧桐秋雨声溢美。

琴秋从小得父指点，又是石门小学的优等生。1921 年她先后就读浙江杭州女子师范大学、上海爱国女校、南京美术专科学校，1924 年春，张琴秋入上海大学学习，在这里，她的命运犹如流经家乡的运河产生了一个方向性的转弯。1923 年 4 月，邓中夏出任该校教育长，改革学制，刷新师资阵容，聘瞿秋白为社会学系主任，陈望道为中国文学系主任。一批著名的共产党人和进步学者蔡和森、张太雷、恽代英、肖楚女、沈雁冰、田汉、郑振铎、丰子恺等先后来校任教。她在这里接受了马克思主义，并加入了社会主义青年团。当时共产党员向警予在上海主持妇女运动，她常到上海大学与女同学们讨论时局和妇女问题。她主张有觉悟的知识妇女应到劳动妇女中去工作。在她的动员下，张琴秋等组织上海大学及其它高校女生先后创办了 10 所工人夜校。在用破草席、蔑片搭成的窝棚里，张琴秋结识了做苦役的劳动女工。她教女工们学文化、唱歌，帮她们料理家务、看护病残。她越来越紧密地将苦难的中国妇女的命运与自己的命运联结在一起。为了寻找革命的真理，1925 年 10 月，她与百余名进步青年登上了一艘苏联货轮赴莫斯科中山大学，开始了长达五年的学习。她除了学习政治学和军事学外，还与纺织厂长期挂钩，学习纺织技术和管理知识。

1930 年秋，张琴秋从莫斯科辗转回到上海，担任中共上海沪东区委员，主管妇女工作。1931 年她被派往当时的鄂豫皖革命根据地，开始了她的女兵生涯。在这个位于湖北、河南、安徽三省交界的穷乡僻壤中，她的身份格外引人注目。她先在以培养红军基层干部为主的彭（湃）杨（殷）军事政治学校任政治部主任。每天晨羲微露，她总是第一个来到操场。她头戴军帽，腰束皮带，斜挂短枪，同学员们一道进行操练。她还负责讲授马列主义理论、



形势任务教育、教唱革命歌曲等课程。并与学员们一起参加修筑工事战壕，射击打靶，野外演赠。1932年，她调任红四方面军73师政治部主任，同年12月又调任红四方面军总政治部主任。1935年红四方面军妇女独立师成立，她任师长兼第一团团团长。

22. (左起)张琴秋、夏之栩、熊天荆，(前右起)吴仲廉、帅孟奇等在南京八路军办事处(1937年8月)

战士们都知道，这位身材苗条、眉清目秀的女红军指挥员，不仅善文，也善武。1933年，她率妇女赤卫营500人与敌独立师刘汉雄部的一个团遭遇。敌军官发现他们的对手是无数缠红布标记的女红军，立即下令攻击。而干兵们见状却不愿开枪。张琴秋趁机带领女兵发动了政治攻势。顿时，山谷中女战士口号声大震：“欢迎革命的士兵兄弟到红军中来！”“红军是打日子鬼子的先锋！”敌军官顿时暴跳如雷，逼令士兵开枪。一士兵向敌团长气愤地说：“老子打了十几年的仗，从没见过保卫民的军队，放着东洋鬼子不打，竟然打自己人，还要同堂客(四川人称女子为堂客)打仗，真是岂有此理！”短军官立即开枪打死了这个士兵。这时，敌军队伍群情激愤，迸发出“打死反动军官到红军去！”的呐喊。他们掉转枪口，扣捕了敌团长、营长。张琴秋率领女战士一面向敌人喊话，一面迅速冲入敌阵地。全部缴获敌团装备，处置了反动军官，一部分白军参加了红军，其余发路费遣送回家。“五百农妇缴一团白军”的新闻传遍全川。成都《蜀蓉通讯》1933年5月25日刊载了这则新闻：《中国论坛》也于同年第二卷第九期作了转载。智勇双全的张琴秋令人刮目相看。

1936年，张琴秋领导的妇女独立师随四方面军参加长征。这是一支在长征的红军队伍中，走的路最长、时间最久的部队。她们和万余名男军人一起，三过草地，两越雪山。其人数之多，牺牲之大，在红军史上是少有的。抗日战争爆发后，妇女独立师又改编为妇女抗日先锋团，随西路军渡黄河西征。

1937年3月，她在战斗中因弹尽粮绝后被俘，被敌人以要犯从西北押送至南京。经周恩来、叶剑英等营救释放。同年底她取道西安到延安，入中央党校学习。毕业后，任延安抗日军政大学女生大队大队长。1939年中国女子大学成立，她任教育长。她是迄今为止女兵独立建制中职务最高的领导。

23.张琴秋与刘少奇、邓颖超、蔡畅(1949年3月)

她的战友们都记挂着这位有学识的领导者，当年才16岁的女红军李开芬，回忆苏区肃反时说，是张琴秋一把将她从活埋“反革命”分子的坟坑里拽了出来：“难道16岁的孩子也杀吗？”有人阻拦，说她破坏肃反，她义正辞严：“你们到政治部找我张琴秋吧！”这位被救的红小鬼，后来担任了北京军区后勤部副政委。

全国解放后，这位年轻时代就与工人息息相通，并在苏联刻苦钻研纺织技术和管理的战士，终于如愿以偿地到了她的专业岗位上，出任国家纺织工业部副部长。她为国家纺织工业的发展鞠躬尽瘁地耕耘着，纺织业麻纺脱胶的技术，就是在她的关怀下建立起来的。这为国家创造了无以数计的经济效益。可惜，十年动乱过早地夺去了她的生命。

#### 4 男人世界中的“百灵鸟”

我早就看到过一张照片，一个女兵入伍前的照片。

她有一双非常美丽的大眼睛。在这张照片上却看不到那双动人的眼睛。她低垂着眼皮，样子显得忧郁。我问：“是不是照坏了？”她说，没有。那时的女孩子是不能抬眼看异性的，照相馆的人是男的，就只能这样照了。那照片上的她，还不满 15 岁。

24. 王新兰在八路军 115 师（1939 年）

25. 红军女战士蹇先任与女儿贺捷生  
（1937 年）

这是封建社会和家庭给女性的定格。在中国“男女授受不亲”的古训由来已久。

我在一大堆浩渺而杂乱无章的资料中寻找红军女战士们的足迹，收集她们留下的照片、手迹，我想知道，是谁第一个打开那部神秘的电台；是谁参加了第一所医院的开办；是谁搭建了红军的第一个舞台……这是中国军队第一批男女混编的技术兵种，受中国封建古训熏陶的女性，是怎开始她们与男性的交往，他们之间又是怎样配合的。

红军的队伍里，几乎每个组织、每个兵种都有女兵的英姿。

1930 年除夕，红军第一方面军和江西苏区的人民是在第一次反“围剿”大捷的欢乐中度过的。这次战斗不仅全歼了国民党第 18 师两个旅和 1 个师部共九千余人，活捉了师长张辉瓒，而且缴获了敌电台一部。这部电台与战斗的大捷相比显得那么微不足道，但在我军发展史上，却是一个历史的开端——红军有了无线电通讯。王诤和刘寅这两个被俘虏的敌电台报务人员，像贵宾似的被请进了红军总司令部。毛泽东和朱德欢迎了他们，并指示他们建立红军自己的电台。这一天是 1931 年 1 月 3 日。这部电台并不完整。在歼灭敌人的战斗中，由于红军战士不懂无线电器的用场，像消灭敌人似的把发报机砸坏了。因此它成了只能听话而不会说话的哑巴。即使这样，三天后，红军总部参谋长的院子里准时响起了充电机的嘟嘟声，红军的第一部电台架设完毕：一部三灯的收信机摆在老乡的一张八仙桌上，窗外高高地支起了接收天线，铅笔、毛边纸、菜油灯，不知是哪位领导同志的怀表也贡献出来了。

红军需要电台，也期盼着自己的无线电技术人员。第一个无线电台通讯班应运而生。12 名学员都是从各军选调的、具有一定文化程度的青年。其中就有 3 名是女兵。她们是学员，也是工作人员。学习都是利用战斗间隙进行的，有时行军小憩的时间也被充分利用。百姓家的堂屋、开井和路旁的大树上就是课堂；门板、床板、砖头、石块就是桌椅。一只电码练习器和一只手键就是主要工具，每个人的左手大拇指也成了自备的手键，用以练习发报。干电池没有电了，打个眼用竹筒装上食盐泡着使用；没有教材，大家一句一句、一节一节地拼凑。我是在邮电部邮电史编辑部撰写的回忆录中，找到这个资料的。记叙的人对三名女兵没有细致和单独的描述，甚至连姓名都没有提到。自然而无声，也许就是女兵加入男性队伍最初的状态吧。

## 26. 红军卫生队男女护士（埃德加·斯诺摄于1937年）

岁月悠悠，红军已成为今天历史的宝贵财富。我们已无法与当年的三位女通讯兵交谈了。

王新兰，当年红军年龄最小的女兵。也是战争年代唯一任电台台长的女通讯兵。1933年与两个哥哥、一个姐姐一道参加了红军，那年她才9岁。长征后，14岁的新兰被送到红军通讯学校学习无线电收发报技术，16岁担任八路军115师电台台长。

如果说经历是人生最大的一笔财富，那么，老天爷是把财富与苦难一起交付给她的。

她的家庭是革命的。父亲是开明绅士，叔叔是川东游击队的创始人王维舟。她9岁当红军，就是跟着叔叔走的，那时他是红33军军长。她的军装是用一件大人的衣服剪的。不久，她就离开了叔叔的部队到红四军宣传队去了。长征后，她在延安见到了叔叔，叔叔说，“我对不起你的父亲，他把你们兄妹四人托付给我，现在只剩了你一人，你的哥哥和姐姐都在长征途中牺牲了。”她抱着叔叔哭得很伤心。她觉得自己一下子长大了，成熟了。这上文化不高的小兵，靠着顽强的毅力，在红军通讯学校取得了甲等的毕业成绩。她告别了当时相对安定的延安，辗转一年，历尽艰辛，逢山爬坡，遇水趟河。途中，还遇到了日本鬼子的追击。但是什么也不能阻挡这名女兵上前线的决心。王新兰硬是走到了位于山东的八路军前线115师。不久她被任命为115师政治部新闻台台长。当时，电台已经成为八路军的主要通讯工具，从支队到团队都有电台，但技术人员与紧张激烈的战事相比仍显得匮乏。

## 27. 红军时期的女看护员

16岁的女台长管理4名报务人员和一台台警卫班。电台是一个靠技术吃饭的地方，技术不好是吃不开的。十几个男兵对这个上司是崇拜加敬佩的。她的技术最好，遇有重大作战任务或天气不好，都是她亲自上机。不论是上级的电台还是下级的电台都愿意与她做搭档。久而久之，对方听到她的声音，就主动用机语向她致敬。女台长受人尊敬由来已久，还在实习的时候，她的男性同行就送她一个动听的雅称：“百灵鸟”，说她发报的声音清脆、动听，就像听百灵鸟唱歌一样。听到“百灵鸟”的声音，他们高兴、振奋。有一次，日军包围了部队驻地的村庄，王新兰带领一百多人突围，他们昼伏夜行，与敌人周旋了一个星期，才与当地的游击队接上了头。听不到“百灵鸟”的声音，几乎整个部队都在为她担心：“百灵鸟”怎么不唱了？有一天，电台台长报告都没喊，哗拉推开司令员房间的门：“唱了，唱了，百灵鸟又唱了！”听到这个消息，就像打了胜仗似的。

在艰苦的战争环境里，电台随师部不停地转移。经常是敌人都进了村，他们的电台还没收线呢。“别慌，来得及。”沉着的女台长，似一尊女视，令人信赖、镇静。

电台除了行军作战，还负责收抄新闻。除了延安播发的新闻，也收美国合众社、英国路透社和日本共同社的新闻。工作是不分白天和夜晚的，经常是困了不能睡，能睡时又过了困劲睡不着。尽管有人可以替换，但人们说女

人心重，王新兰总是放不下心来，这是千万人的生命线啊！旧时的小姐“睡足图茶 梦亦香”，而女战士王新兰的梦是带着硝烟味的，睡不一会儿，她就会突然惊醒，立即起身，到机房去看一看。十几岁就落下了神经衰弱的毛病，至今加倍地折磨着她。抗日战争胜利了，有人问新兰有什么打算，这位女台长认真地说：“我最大的愿望就是睡一个完整的觉。”

山坳里的红军一切都是白手起家，简陋和艰苦同样令人吃惊。以至于在红军初创时期，战斗已经打响，而后方的医疗条件诸如纱布、消毒药水等最基本的保障都不具备。刚入伍不久的红军女卫生兵，面临的就是这样的“无米之炊”。令她们尴尬的还不止这些。

女红军战士周淑女回忆她 1928 年在井冈山根据地救护伤员的情景时说：“战斗在新、老七溪岭进行。因为红军枪支少，农民自卫军多数使用梭镖、大刀，加之在山梁上没有坚固的工事，所以交战初时，红军伤亡较大。伤员一个个被抬进祠堂，紧张的救护工作开始了。”

第一次接触男人的身体是令人害羞的。毕竟是女兵们生平中的第一次。有的人吓得不敢动手，眼睛里充满了恐怖。男人，血，都是传统的女性所避讳的。革命的女战士，她们也不是完人。身上既有封建制度的烙印，也有女性天生的软弱。然而，战争把这个以往要很久才能进展的距离缩短了。没有消毒药水，她们就用盐水代替；没有纱布，姑娘们撕了头巾为伤员包扎；没有止血药，她们立即组织人力到附近田野里采草药。

为自己人服务，同情心和怜悯可以使人忘却一切。而抬进来的伤兵中也有白军，实在令女兵们厌恶。救护队员们不愿意给这些“坏蛋”包扎，撅着嘴和周淑女“理论”起来。周淑女耐心地劝导她们：姐妹们，你们怎么忘了咱们平时唱的歌啦？“白军兄弟听我谈，扛枪打仗为哪般？军官享福你卖命，伤残病死有谁怜？”他们也是穷苦人出身，为蒋介石打仗是被迫无奈的嘛！我们救护了他们，他们就会明白谁好谁坏的。周淑女和她领导的救队一直工作到中午，枪声渐渐地稀少了。她们才发现自己的衣服都被汗水湿透了。

前线来人对她们说：“我们打了大胜仗，打垮了两只‘羊’！”“什么羊？”女兵们迷惑了。“两只大‘肥羊’！两个杨司令（国民党赣军第 9 师杨池生和湘军第 27 师杨如轩）！”顿时，沉寂和疲劳的红军女战士们又振奋起来了。这个胜仗是红军总司令朱德亲自指挥的。他特意表扬了这支没有上前线的女兵。

## 28. 苏维埃工厂的青年先锋队（埃德加·斯诺摄于 1937 年）

周淑女和她的救护队从遍地血污的、被当做救护所的祠堂里出来后的第一件事，便是宣传这次打胜仗的消息：

红军打仗真漂亮，  
打垮白军两只“羊”。  
……  
杀了白“羊”下酒饭，  
欢欢喜喜过端阳。

这些非专业的、近乎大白话的“顺口溜”经女战士们现场演出，竟也引

来战士和村民们的热烈掌声。谁能说这个胜仗中没有她们的功劳呢！女兵在医疗和宣传中的作用从此被发扬，直到今天，80%的女兵都是活跃在医院、通讯站和文工团。

## 5 让红军看到国际艺术的“赤色舞星”

1931年，在中央苏区江西瑞金连续发生了两件盛事：第一所红军艺术学校——高尔基戏剧学校诞生；红军第一个剧团——八一剧团成立。创始人是两名女兵。她们是被称为“赤色跳舞明星”的李伯钊与她的留苏同学、黄埔军校女生危拱之。李伯钊任戏剧学校校长。学校设立了戏剧、歌咏和舞蹈班，还有一个专业性剧团——“苏维埃剧团”即原八一剧团。李伯钊亲任团长。学校先后培养了1000多名学员，为红军训练了60多个剧团。其中以红军一军团的战士剧社、三军团的火线剧社和五军团的猛进剧社最为活跃和出色。各个剧团的演出剧本大多数是李伯钊的作品，她写的《扩大红军》、《无论如何要胜利》、《工农团结》、《一起去抗日》等，都是苏区最流行也是最受欢迎的剧目。她作为红军第一个剧团——八一剧团的创始人，既是编剧、导演和晚会的组织者，又是主要演员。

李伯钊的同学危拱之也是位极具魅力的女性，编剧、导演、舞蹈、歌咏样样拿得起，不能想象的是这位红军艺术家的双足竟是“解放脚”（即缠足后放开的，趾骨受损伤）。革命前，她第一次提出剪发、要解掉裹脚布时，大哥严厉地说：“谁要剪发、解掉裹脚布，我就砍掉她的头。”这个弹足的女孩子，在1927年勇敢地报考了中央军校，按照步兵操典进行了严格的训练，军校毕业后，她又挂着红色的牺牲带（被俘后自尽的武器），投入了著名的广州起义。她奋力挣脱封建社会对女子的束缚，千里迢迢到苏联学习现代知识和现代艺术。从缠足到表演现代舞，不仅反映了危拱之心理的一个复杂而艰难的历程，同时也标志着中国妇女追求自身独立和解放的世纪性的跨越。

旧社会有“好男子不进赌场，好女子不进戏场”之说。女戏子是“艺妓”的代名词。即使演戏，男女同台也不是正宗的。在中国传统戏剧的组合中，越剧团是青一色的女性；京剧团是青一色的男性；著名的“四大名旦”，都是男人。如果女子能登台演京剧，中国戏剧史上，很可能就没有梅兰芳了。

### 29. 李伯钊在延安（1939年）

红军中的文化女兵吃的是红米饭，喝的是南瓜汤。她们追求的艺术却堪称“摩登”。当时话剧刚从西方引入中国，被人们叫做“文明戏”，它的对象也只是大城市中的知识分子和青年学生，县级以下都看不到。李伯钊、危拱之们在红军中普及和创作现代艺术的速度，在艺术史上应该是个奇迹。

红军演出的现场富有天然的戏剧性和创造性。舞台是就地搭建的，幕布是用被单拼接的。松枝是他们的灯光；一支口琴就是全部的乐队；连演出服装都是自己改裁缝制的。演员没有化装油彩就用炭代替；没有胭脂就用红纸蘸水模拟。艰苦的条件并没有削弱剧团演出的效果。他们创作的反映部队生活的节目一拉开帷幕，台上、台下顿时融为一体，口号声、鼓掌声响成一片。当李伯钊和危拱之表演从苏联带回的《红军舞》、《海军舞》、《乌克兰舞》

和美国舞蹈家邓肯的《巴黎墙下》等舞蹈时，全场一下子轰动了！只听过山歌小调，看过活报旧戏的苏区军民，第一次看到了“国际艺术”。他们的演出成了中央苏区文化生活的盛事。

30.李伯钊（左四）与莫斯科中山大学柳圃青（左一），张琴秋（右四），沈泽民（右二）等（1927年冬于莫斯科）

在艰苦的战争年代，看女兵的演出，是享受；女兵的存在，对那些浴血奋战的田战士来说，更是一种无形的力量。这是一个真实的、未加任何修饰的红军女宣传队员在长征中过雪山的记录：‘过雪山时，凌晨3点，队长和指导员就把我们叫醒，部队5点动身，我们必须提早到显要处塔鼓动棚。时值初夏，我们身上只有一件单衣。这里居民稀少，找不到吃的，更找不到烈酒、生姜等御寒的物品。队长、指导员要我们每人找了一根木棍，把能穿的、披的全部拿了出来，待寒冷时裹在身上。还给我们每人发了一块布，让大家把脚包上，套在草鞋里。他们不知从哪里找一些辣椒，熬了一锅椒汤，我们热热地喝了一顿，便带上锣鼓、竹板子上路了。来到山下，气温骤降，地下的雪冻得硬梆梆的，木棍着地发出‘咚、咚’的响声。走到山腰，狂风大作，冰雪横飞。脸上、身上冻得像刀割，我们把所有能披的东西都披在身上，也无济于事。越往上爬，空气越稀薄，呼吸越困难，有的想坐下来喘口气，结果坐下去就再没有起来；有的停下来，远处一望，雪光刺目，眼前发黑，一头栽到地上，再也没能起来。看到这情况，队长、指导员马上组织我们拿出锣鼓，在路边给部队加油，提醒大家，按军部要求，不要停步，不要抬头看，不要坐下来。军领导的总结起了作用，我们的鼓动也产生了效果。一队队的红军战士，从我们身边开过。接近山顶，暴风更狂，呼吸更难，大雪像棉花团一样落下来，不少人走到这里，已经耗尽了所有的力气，双腿一软，就跌进了峡谷。为了给部队鼓劲，我们又在风口上设立了宣传站：‘加油啊！前边就是山顶了！’‘谁英雄，谁好汉，雪山顶上比比看！’风雪中，我们激情地唱起了《少年先锋队队歌》：走上前去啊/曙光在前/同志们奋斗……高山缺氧，本来呼吸困难，再加上憋气一唱，我的鼻口流血，胸口像塞了棉花一样难受，但我仍然鼓足力气唱下去：勇敢向前/稳着脚步/高举革命红旗/……看着我们这些体弱的幼小的孩子，站在风口上宣传鼓动，红军战士都很受感动，特别是那些有病的同志，看着我们激动地点点头，拼尽所有的力气，向山头爬去。”她，就是后来当了八路军115师电台台长的，红军中年龄最小的女兵王新兰。每一个从她身边走过的红军战士都会记得她。

31.危拱之（1949年）

32.红军剧团演出的《红色机器舞》（埃德加·斯诺摄于1937年）

红军的两万五千里长征，震动了全中国和全世界。历经12个省市，把革命的火种撒播在人民的心间。红军中的女兵更是举世瞩目。1936年巴黎《救国时报》曾刊登记者杨定华写的通讯，从《从甘肃到陕西》，记者写道：“在这里更有意思的是，几位汉、回农妇对于红军中做政治工作的女战士，她们觉得这些女战士言语行动明明是女子，但细看她们穿着戎装、麻鞋、又缠着

绑腿，佩着手枪，雄赳赳的，又引起她们的怀疑。于是几个农妇格外亲热地牵着一个女同志向她们家跑。一会儿，所有女同志都被当地回、汉农妇牵到她们家里去了。因为她们对女同志是男是女还抱一点儿怀疑态度，所以向女同志‘实行检查’……红军同志当时弄得莫明其妙，大家哗然一笑。然而这些‘实行检查’的农妇则更进一步亲热，请那些红色女战士上炕。女同志不仅被请上炕，而且被农妇们请吃了很好的晚饭呢！我想，这不仅是因为女性之间更亲切的关系，而且是因为她们对万里长征的女战士确抱着无限羡慕和敬仰。”

33. 《统一战线舞》（埃德加·斯诺摄于1937年）

## B 章 文化女兵和女兵文化

### 抗日战争时期的女兵（1937—1945）



## 6 非动员性的中国知识女性的军事集结

1938年初春，冬天的寒气尚未完全消褪。在武昌的一个小旅社里，一位女青年正蜷缩着读一本书，她边读边用嘴在手上哈着气，一双眼睛迅速地扫视着周围。她读的是一本正被查抄的禁书，美国著名记者斯诺写的《西行漫记》她很快就被这本书吸引了。在这本她认为是记述神话般的人的书里，有一个她十分熟悉的女性——危拱之。她们都是河南信阳人，都是开封私立北仓女子中学的学生，更有趣的是危女士当年报考军校是她父亲提供的路费。给她留下的深刻印象是，那时每天早餐固定的鸡蛋突然没有了，全家都很奇怪，父亲的薪金怎么一下减少了那么多？直到她长大了，父亲才给她讲述了这件危险而神秘的往事。现在她也踏上了危女士的道路，投笔从戎。她刚从华北前线回来。不久，人们在茅盾先生主办的《文艺阵地》上，读到了她在硝烟下写就的报告文学《在汤阴火线》，并看到了茅盾先生为她作的序。单纯的宣传抗日已经满足不了她的愿望，她的目的是书中描绘的神秘的革命根据地延安，一支真正的抗日武装队伍正在那里召唤她。她如愿以偿地到了延安；再后来，她随刘邓大军挺进大别山；她走一路写一路，留下了上百万字的作品。她就是曾克，抗日战争时期一代女兵的杰出代表。

这是一代饱受五四新文化熏陶的女性。她们都是揣着新文化书籍和钢笔走进军营的。与她们的前辈们不同的是，在战争中，她们从事了卓有成效的文建设。在中国历史上，留下了中国女兵文化的非凡业绩。

### 34. 丁玲和她率领的 18 集团军西北战地服务团（1937 年）

几千年来，中国封建宗制度对妇女的要求即：“女子无才便是德。”于中国大多数妇女因此失去了受教育的权利。由于中国妇女整体的无文化、无地位，它所折射出的女性文化，只是少数生活在富裕家庭中的受家庭文化教育的大家闺秀表现出的纯个人的一种在家庭生活半径内的情绪和痛苦呻吟。她们的作品大多流散在民间，很少登大雅之堂。中国女性新文化起源于 1911 辛亥革命前后女子学校的兴办和 1919 年“五四新文化运动”。这时，虽然出现了进步妇女的团体组织和独立的妇女报刊，但由于中国妇女整体上的不独立和不解放，这种新文化的呼声，也是微弱和没有地位的。1937 年 7 月 7 日，爆发了震惊中外的卢沟桥事变，标志着日本军国主义全面侵华战争和中国人民全国性抗日战争的开始。大批知识妇女和女学生参军、参战，她们把争取自身解放和争取民族解放融汇在一起，她们所代表的女性新文化意识，也在抗日战争这片民族解放的广袤土地上得以发挥和生长。这不仅为中国女兵队伍注入了新鲜血液，也使中国女性新文化的形成和发展与女兵结下了不解之缘。

这是一次非动员性的中国女性知识分子的军事集结。

### 35. 孩子剧团离开八路军办事处时，邓颖超等在门口送行。（1938 年 2 月）

1937 年 8 月 12 日，18 集团军西北战地服务团由在延安抗日军政大学学习的一批知识分子组成。女作家丁玲任主任。团员 33 人开赴抗日前线。

同年 9 月 14 日，由女作家谢冰莹组织的湖南妇女战地服务团随国民党第四军开赴淞沪前线。

同年 10 月,上海劳动妇女战地服务团由全国妇女抗敌慰劳总会上海分会负责人何香凝女士与上海女青年会劳工夜校联合发起组成,黄埔军校女学员胡兰畦任团长。战地服务团在前线拉开了慰问演出的序幕。

#### 36. 云南妇女战士服务团在开赴台儿庄途中行军休息

活跃在全国各战区较大的妇女战地服务团及以妇女为主的战地服务团还有:新四军战地服务团、第五战我战时文化工作团、上海第二、第三批劳动妇女战地服务团、云南妇女战地服务团、上海文化界战地服务团、四川妇女战地服务团、山西妇女战地服务团、汉口基督教女青年会战地服务团、贵州妇女战地服务团、北平女青年战地服务团和香港妇女战地服务团,广西南宁、玉林等地也成立了战地妇女工作队、战工团、战教团等组织,参加抗日救亡活动。

#### 37. 第五战区文化工作团(1937年)

#### 38. 抗日战争时期的妇女自卫队在实弹射击

#### 39. 东北抗日联军第一路军女队员

#### 40. 新四军女战士在练习爬墙

#### 41. 琼崖抗日纵队的女战士

#### 42. 参加齐会战斗的八路军 120 师女战士(1939年4月)

#### 43. 八路军 115 师的女干部(1944年)

#### 44. 战斗在太行山的八路军女战士与总司令朱德

她们不仅为前线募集和捐献钱物,担负抢救护理伤员的任务,还以妇女独特的形式活跃在各战区,形成了中国女兵的战地文化现象。丁玲率领的 18 集团军西北战地服务团从延安出发,渡过黄河,走遍山西 16 个市县、60 多个村庄,辗转 3000 余里。丁玲在她的著作《上前线去》中记述道:“天天行军,搭舞台、拆舞台、开会、讲话、演戏、唱歌……做着许多我过去不曾做过的事,做着为兵服务的事。”在日军炮轰潼关,西安岌岌可危的时候,他们到达西安,与当地救亡团体一起进行文艺宣传活动。他们自编自导自演抗日戏剧,每月至少要公演 20 次,有时竟以 3 天 7 场的效率演出。他们还张贴抗战标语,教唱抗战歌曲,到各民众团体去教政治课或作演讲,宣传动员民众起来抗战。他们编写了《西北战地服务丛书》10 册,还编印了《西北文艺》若干期。以胡兰畦为首的上海劳动妇女战地服务团在 3 年中,转战苏、浙、皖、赣、湘、鄂、豫、闽等 8 省,行程达两万余里。她们战时上前线救护伤兵,清扫战场,平时在士兵中进行宣传、演出、从事文化教育和纠正军风纪等工作。谢冰莹率领的湖南妇女战地服务团除此之外,还规定了四条纪律:

“一、牺牲一切，为国家民族奋斗到底；二、本着穷干、苦干、实干的精神，不唱高调，不抱其他企图；三、决不谈恋爱；四、与士兵共甘苦，同生死。”她们用行动实践着自己的诺言。睡的是潮湿的地铺，喝的是泥沟里的污水，还经常在阴雨泥泞中行军，连续几天吃不上饱饭。她们第一次看到了中国妇女组织起来的力量，这个力量激励着她们。

抗战初期，所有的妇女抗日团体，都把宣传抗日、唤起妇女觉醒，作为第一位的任务。唱抗日歌曲，演出抗日戏剧，作抗日演讲，几乎成了妇女抗日团体每个成员的基本功。开封孩子剧团，是著名长征女战士危拱之创建的。它于1938年3月8日在开封首次公演，受到社会各界的普遍关注。接着又到郑州、洛阳公演，轰动一时，得到群众交口称赞。第五战区抗敌青年军团女生大队，下设2个中队，每中队150人左右。她们以潢川为枢纽，活跃在豫东南各地。她们教唱《流亡三部曲》等抗战歌曲；参加演出《放下你的鞭子》、《三江好》、《大惊小怪》等街头剧；办报刊，出墙报，到街头演讲，扩大抗日宣传。

#### 45. 八路军女战士在开荒生产

#### 46. 八路军 120 师女战士利用战斗间隙自制麻绳

新四军的第一批女兵来源于军部所属的战地服务团。从最初的几十名女兵迅速扩大到200多人。她们演出的反映农村的媳妇送丈夫参军抗日的戏剧“送才郎”，在江南妇女中掀起了一个拥军热潮：在河畔、在灶旁都可以听到年轻的嫂嫂低声地哼着“送才郎”的小调。唱的多了，一位姑娘补充了这样一段：“恋郎要恋新四兵，说出话来句句真，打起仗来次次胜”；一位男子又和了两句：“吃菜要吃白菜心，当兵要当新四兵”。

战地服务团演出歌曲成为抗日的流行歌曲；演出的剧目在不断地被复制、传抄。他们所到之地形成了一种有钱出钱，有力出力，团结抗战的动人景象。一位慷慨的寡妇一次就捐献了三百担军粮，她的举动又带动了一对米店的老板和老板娘，也捐献了同样的军粮。

#### 47. 八路军 359 旅女战士在纺线

1939年2月18日，新四军副军长项英为纪念“三八”国际劳动妇女节撰文《我们的女战士》，高度评价“新四军的女兵已成为大江南北敌前敌后的最活跃的战士，成为抗日民众运动的组织者，宣传者，成为新四军战斗力之一部，战斗胜利的不可少的力量之一。”

#### 48. 华北二区队八路军女战士在赶制服装

49. 担任八路军山东纵队政治部秘书长的吴仲廉（左一）在鲁东一次战斗休息中，与政治部组织部长、保卫部长和作战科长在一起（1940年）。

50. 陈少敏与新四军五师师长李先念（右一）、华东局代表郑位三（1943年）。

51. 日军轰炸重庆时，八路军办事处机要人员在野外坚持工作。图为他们在野外用餐。

52. 新四军女医生，左起：郑素文、赵国宝、张婉、金鼎、毛铮。

日本帝国主义发动侵华战争，对中国人民进行了惨绝人寰的烧杀淫掠，而妇女遭受的蹂躏和摧残尤其令人发指。仅在震惊中外的南京大屠杀中，南京市就“发生了两万左右的强奸事件”。《远东国际法庭军事判决书》中写道：“全城中无论是幼年的少女或老年的妇人，多数都被奸污了，并且在这类强奸中，还有许多变态的淫虐狂行为的事例，许多妇女在强奸后被杀，还将她们的躯体斩断。”中国妇女痛切地感到，自己的命运完全维系于祖国的存亡，抗日则存，不抗则亡。妇女独立的抗日武装成立了。

抗战初期，有两支影响颇大的妇女武装组织：一个是广西学生军；一个是浙江绍兴妇女营。1937年9月成立的广西女学生军有女生130人，开始就以她的《告全国女同胞书》引起了全国的瞩目：“抗日的怒火，已烧遍了四方！从千重的高压下面，从万条的锁链中间，起来吧！中华民族的女儿：保卫我们的祖国！保卫全世界的和平！”“我们能忍心看着同胞们做亡国奴的惨痛吗？不，我们要生存，与其坐待敌人残暴地奸淫屠杀而死，不如轰轰烈烈地在沙场肉搏里去求生。”“起来吧！亲爱的姊妹们，别再踌躇，别再叹惜，也别再迷信命运。踌躇叹惜迷信是灭亡的道路……起来吧！热血的姊妹们！鼓起勇气跳出厨房，抛弃家庭，踏上救亡图存的坦道，和敌人清算民族的血帐！”《抗战三日刊》、《妇女生活》、《浙江妇女》等报刊对她们的活动进行了广泛的介绍和报道。

浙江绍兴妇女营创建于1938年5月，是活跃在钱塘江两岸的一只妇女武装力量。有队员45人，分为宣传、救护、武装战斗三个队。同年11月，妇女营参加了夜袭王店的战斗，与青年营一起打击了日军一个小分队。几天后，《妇女营夜袭王店》等三篇报道文章，在绍兴《战旗》杂志第41期发表，引起了国内外进步人士的注目，产生了广泛的社会影响。妇女营还深入海宁拦击伪县长，放火焚烧汉奸主办的《更生日报》，袭击敌宣抚班和伪县公署等。1939年3月，任国民政府军事委员会政治部副部长的周恩来检阅了妇女营。5月，他在桂林对《救亡日报》发表谈话：“最令我感奋的事，要算妇女营渡过钱塘江去杀敌的事情了”，“一两个或三五个妇女杀敌的故事，在八路军和新四军里是有过的。学生军上战地服务，五路军也有过一大队。但是成队地深入敌后作战，妇女营要算创举了！”

53. 延安八路军医院的医务工作者在工作中

54. 新四军的卫训班女学员陈琦影（左二）、陈炳玲（左四）（新四军军长叶挺摄）

55. 新四军第三期卫训班学员出操，第一排左为郑锦霞。

56. 新四军三师气象训练班毕业留影（1945年9月20日）

## 7 从“文小姐”到“武将军”

在这支抗日的知识女性的军事集合体中，有相当一部分是当时中国上流社会的大家闺秀。她们以其独有的反叛精神和文化素质影响着这支队伍。

中国社会发展到本世纪的30年代，上流社会的大家闺秀一般都能享受到教育的权利，缠绕女性的“童养媳”制、“缠足”等已对她们不构成威胁。但重男轻女仍然是社会风气的主流。

著名的民族英雄林则徐的后代中，有一个倍感压抑的女子，她因身材矮小、瘦弱而受母亲的冷落，家里每个孩子都在寺庙里都有一个“寄名符”，唯独没有她的。8岁那年，一位堂姐关心地问：“告诉我，你一顿吃几碗饭？”这个简单的问话，对她来说，就像一道复杂的算术题，竟不知道如何回答才好。她不是不会说话，而是不知道怎样说，母亲听后才会满意，才不会生气。如果不回答堂姐的话，母亲知道了也会给她气受。她转着眼睛回答：“不知道！”就跑掉了。她幼小的心灵中，在反抗这种命运的不公。渐渐地，她长大了，上学了，她发现像她这样的“诗礼之家”，几乎都有一个如“出气筒”般的女孩子，穷苦人家的女孩就更凄惨了。以后，她考取了燕京大学，参加了地下党，领导了一个读书会，投身到抗日民族解放的洪流。日本人追捕她，组织上找她说，你不能姓林了，你必须改姓。她改名换姓投奔了八路军。她的反叛，带动了她的两个哥哥也参加了八路军。在晋察冀军区，她先做了很多首长们的“先生”，教授中级班的文化。至今，一位高级干部还念念不忘他们的这位文化教员呢。以后，她一面教书，一面在《子弟兵报》当编辑。还当了《荣臻小学》（现八一中学的前身）的第一任校长。她不知道，就在她秘密加入地下党的时候，她的孪生妹妹，已经先她一步，在江南参加了新四军，成为活跃在前线的新华社战地记者。她说：“我那时并不真正懂得阶级这个词，我感受到的是社会对女性的压迫，是日本人对中华民族的压迫，我内心充满一种反叛的意识。这种意识是十分强烈的，也是非常勇敢的。1942年，毛泽东在延安讲抗战一定能够胜利时，正是我们抗战异常艰苦的时期，我脑子里，根本就没有想到能够活着回北京。因为出来的时候，就把一切都想好了，学位、名誉我都不要了，我就是抗日到底，为民族牺牲一切。”她贡献给民族的不仅是青春，还有她的第一个孩子。

她不愿意讲她的姓名，她说，那个年代像她这样的女学生太多了，自己只是尽了一点微力而已，不足挂齿。

57. 新四军江南指挥部女战士。左起：张茜、罗伊、陈模、楚青（陈毅摄于1940年春）。

58. 新四军女战士与战地服务团女同志一起演唱歌曲，右二起：王于耕、李珉、周纫慧、张茜（1939年）

59. 新安旅行团小队员（张爱萍摄于1944年）

60. 新四军三师八旅女战士，左一为邓六金（张爱萍摄于1942年）

1904年10月12日，湖南临澧的一家名门望族诞生了一位千金小姐。23年后，她用丁玲这个笔名创作，写下了小说《梦珂》和《莎菲女士的日记》，小说发表后，好似在死寂的文坛上，抛下一颗炸弹一样，“大家都不免为她的天才震惊了”。

1936年，这位中国当代文坛著名的女作家，历经艰辛到达延安，毛泽东曾关切地问：“丁玲，你打算做什么呀？”她的回答就是三个字：“当红军。”女作家的选择，同她的作品一样，同样新鲜得令人震惊。毛泽东告诉她：“好呀！还赶得上，可能还有最后一仗，跟着杨尚昆他们领导的总政治部上前线去吧！”她以极大的热情开始了军旅生涯。

如果人生是无数个选择的集合体，丁玲的机会应该比一般的女性多，事实也是如此。但她却选择了当兵。我们沿着她的生命轨迹，寻找那个属于必然性的链条。

### 61. 丁玲在延安（1938年）

丁玲的幼年，也有一段如林氏姐妹般辛酸的回忆。她12岁的时候，弟弟不幸夭折。家族的人都来哭丧，一位族人竟当着她的面说，“可惜死的是弟弟，如果是滨之（丁玲的小名）就好了。”这句话像刀似的刺痛了她幼小的心。她一生写了大量的反映妇女生活和命运的文学作品，最初的冲动，就是从这时开始的。

### 62. 在八路军前线总指挥部的丁玲（前右二）、康克清（前左一）、与总司令朱德（后右三）、副总司令彭德怀（后右一）、左权（后左一）（1938年）

丁玲的作品中，曾不止一次地提到英国戏剧家易卜生剧中的女主角挪拉，那是个反对家庭压迫、追求自由的女性。挪拉出走后到哪里去？易卜生没有回答这个问题，留下了引人深思的戏剧悬念。20年代，丁玲写了绝望的梦珂，写了郁闷的莎菲，写了痛苦的苇护，她与这些在中国出走的“挪拉”们一起思考和挣扎。“悄悄地活下去，悄悄地死去，”她说，“这是一种苦闷的东西，寂寞的东西，我都厌倦了的东西，到底追求什么，自己也不明白，莎菲追求、向往的是她还没有把握的……”她没有停止对光明的探索，她仍然在写穷学生、小教员，写乡下姑娘、热恋中的少女，写这些找不到出路的女性，如何成了生活、命运、感情的俘虏。她带着她们的痛苦，参加了上海的左翼作家联盟。刚投身革命的丁玲，就遭到了打击：她的丈夫、青年诗人胡也频及柔石等23名革命者饮弹龙华……她把刚满三个月的婴儿送到湖南老家，就开始负责编辑左联机关刊物《北斗》。1932年丁玲加入了中国共产党。她的作品由关注个人的命运，转入探索和关注民族命运。1933年，前进中的丁玲，遭到了国民党特务的秘密绑架，她被监禁在南京，失去人身自由长达3年。狱中的丁玲仍然顽强不屈地写作。她像关注自己一样，关注着中国“挪拉”们的命运。1936年，丁玲参加红军，已经不是对人生道路的试探，而成为她追求民主和自由的道路的必然。

延安用简单也是隆重的礼节欢迎了这位远方来的赤子，在一间大窑洞

里，为她举行了欢迎晚会，毛泽东和周恩来等领导人都来了。丁玲说：“这是我有生以来，也是一生中最幸福最光荣的时刻吧。我是那么无所顾虑、欢乐满怀地第一次在那么多的领导同志面前讲话。我讲了在南京的一段生活，就像从远方回到家里的一个孩子，在向父亲、母亲那么亲昵地喋喋不休地饶舌。”很快，她随红军去了陇东前线。脚打泡了，她学战士的样子，用根线蘸着油穿过去，第二天照样行军。部队宿营，人们忘了她，她就住在马号里，通夜通夜听着马嚼草；有时住在伙房，常常半夜里弄火煮饭。1937年，丁玲陪同美国记者史沫特莱从前线回到了延安，毛泽东又问她：你还打算做什么？她回答：还是当红军。她被分配到中央警卫团政治部任副主任，她还搞不懂自己的管辖范围是什么。她到了被称为连队“救亡室”的士兵俱乐部，战士们问她：“你会吹口琴吗？”丁玲摇摇头。她没有感觉尴尬和难堪，她把自己融入到战士们之中，熟悉着从来不曾接触到的生活。抗日战争爆发了，她率领18集团军战地服务团开赴抗日前线，她认为这是她“真正当兵”的日子。八路军的将领们都愿意与这位城里来的女作家聊天，朱德总司令打开了地图，向她讲解战区的形势。左权同志索性绘声绘色地给她摆起了“龙门阵”。115师的将领杨得志，干脆将刚缴获的日本军官的呢大衣送给了她。丁玲在西北战地服务团的那些日子，总是身穿这件长得快到脚面的男式大衣，她说，穿缴获日军的大衣，就是最形象的宣传八路军抗日的信息。她一路演出，一路讲演，一路写作。今天，我们已无法听到她的讲演，看到她编排的抗战戏剧，但是我们从她的文章中，还能感受到她的那种艰苦但带有甜味的回忆。她完全把自己融化在这个集体之中。她满腔热情地写这些人，写前线士兵的生活。她不仅引起了整个八路军的关注，而且也成为敌人仇视的对象。她用一支女性的笔，女性的方式，出现在抗日的战场上。毛泽东写诗称赞她：“昨天文小姐，今日武将军。”

中国的“挪拉”离开了家庭，离开了昔日熟悉的城镇生活，到中国贫瘠的山区里来了，到民族解放的队伍中来了。但这里也不是一片净土，革命的人，也有一条封建的尾巴。丁玲这支反封建的笔，也没有忘记扫自己队伍中的封建尾巴。她那双充满同情的目光始终没有离开自己身边的姊妹们，抗战队伍中一些轻视妇女的思想和事，痛苦地折磨着她。1942年“三八节”前夕，她用了一个晚上的时间，把这些沉积已久的想法，倾注在《三八节有感》的杂文中，语重心长地写道：“我自己是女人，我会比别人更懂得女人的缺点，但我却更懂得女人的痛苦。她们不会是超时代的，不会是理想的，她们不是铁打的。她们抵抗不了社会一切的诱惑，和无声的压迫，她们每人都有一部血泪史，都有过崇高的感情（不管是升起的或沉落的，不管有幸与不幸，不管仍在孤苦奋斗或卷入庸俗），这对于来延安的女同志说来更不冤枉，所以我是拿着很大的宽容来看一切被沦为女犯的人的。而且我更希望男子们尤其是有地位的男子，和女人本身都把这些女人的过错看得与社会有联系些。少发空议论，多谈实际的问题，使理论与实际不脱节，在每个共产党员的修身上都对自己负责些就好了。”

### 63. 丁玲在陕西省妇女纪念“三八”国际妇女节集会上讲话（1938年）

民族民主革命斗争，锤炼和升华了她的妇女解放的理论，她最终找到了中国“挪拉”出走后的归宿，她提出：“世界上没有无能的人，有资格去获

取一切的。所以女人要取得平等，得首先强己。”怎样“强己”？她除了身体方面的健强外，第一次提出了中国妇女在心理文化修养方面的要求，这不是她一时心血来潮的发言，而是她啼血生命的结晶：“第二，使自己愉快。只有愉快里面才有青春，才有活力，才觉得生命饱满，才觉得能担受一切磨难，才有前途，才有享受。这种愉快不是生活的满足，而是生活的战斗和进取……第三，用脑子。最好养成一种习惯。改正不作思索，随波逐流的毛病……才不会上当，被一切甜蜜所蒙蔽，被小利所诱，才不会浪费热情，浪费生命，而免除烦恼。第四，下吃苦的决心，坚持到底。生为现代的有觉悟的女人，就要有认定牺牲一切蔷薇色的温柔的梦幻。幸福是暴风雨中的搏斗，而不是月下弹琴，花前吟诗。假如没有最大的决心，一定会在中途停歇下来。不悲苦，即堕落。而这种支持下去的力量却必须在‘有恒’中来养成。而这种抱负只有真真为人类，而非为已的人才会有。”这篇文章的发表，在当时抗日根据地引起了极大的反响。然而，它给这位女战士带来的更多的是不理解和不公平的批判。

金子永远不会因尘土的遮盖而诋毁它的质量。它作为迄今为止最优秀的妇女论谈之一，仍然闪烁着不屈的生命之光。

站在 20 世纪末的中国，我们仍需要重复丁玲当年的质问：“‘妇女’这两个字，将在什么时代才不被重视，不需要特别的被提出呢？”

64. 身着日本军大衣的丁玲（大衣为八路军 115 师平型关战役的战利品，抗日将领杨得志赠送，1937 年）

65. 毛泽东写给丁玲的诗词（1936 年）

66. 发表在延安《解放日报》上的《三八节有感》（1942 年）

## 8 在延安的黄土高坡，她跳了一个马来西亚的“土风舞”

自从本世纪 70 年代，中国开放的大门敞开，全世界到处可以看到黄皮肤的中国姑娘。到国外去，成为中国姑娘的时尚。

而在抗日战争的中国女兵队伍中，有一批来自海外的华桥同胞。

廖冰初到延安的印象颇令她失望。且不说从新加坡到香港在海上漂流了多少天，又从香港到广州再到西安一路风尘，她都可以忍受。打鬼子，抗日，能是轻轻松松的事吗！沿途，雨下个不停，当她和同学们到达目的地——延安陕北公学分校时，连衣裙已经沾满了泥巴，看不出颜色了。他们盼望着到了学校能痛痛快快地洗个澡。男同学被分配到一个村子里了，她和几个女生被分配到三区队 37 队（女生队），带她们的人说，“到了”。她发现这也是个村庄，只是村名很好听，叫看花宫村。她四处张望：学校在哪里？！没有教室，没有礼堂，没有桌椅板凳。当然，也没有花。临走前，尽管她做了许多有关艰苦的思想准备，但与现实相比，显得格外苍白。最使她难受的是没有水。满身泥巴，没处去洗澡。她在新加坡时一天要洗两次澡，现在一个班 10 个人，每天早晨共用一盆水洗脸。吃的馒头、小米饭爬满了苍蝇……她拿着馒头不敢吃，也咽不下。晚上，她裹着满身的脏土躺在床上睡不着觉。她永远也忘不了这一天——1938 年 7 月 23 日。



同学们担心这个“南洋小姐”能否坚持下来？

67. 廖冰（中）经过吉隆坡时，与欢送她去延安的朋友合影（1938年）

廖冰选择延安并不是偶然的。她身上负有的使命是双重的。日寇侵华，激起了海外华人的同仇敌忾，她是新加坡马来亚文化协会的妇女部长，她们的口号是为民族求生存，为女子求解放。1937年3月8日，新加坡《中华晨报》副刊以整版的篇幅，刊登了她的自传体散文《她更生了》，记述了她摆脱童养媳婚约，追求人生自由的坎坷经历。1938年3月8日，她又作为新加坡怡保纪念国际“三八”妇女节大会的主席，提出发挥妇女作用，动员起来抗日救国，为祖国的独立、解放尽自己力量的要求，受到妇女们的热烈欢迎。当她提出返回祖国、到延安抗日的筹划时，得到了怡保妇女互助会、《中华晨报》职员、印刷工人、中小学教师的响应。他们为这位年轻的女性筹集资金、准备行装。临行前，三哥赠言鼓励她：“把握住现实，在刺刀下认识人生。”朋友们有的用英文、有的用中文写词、写诗填满了她的纪念册。廖冰觉得，她身上负载的不仅是个人对祖国的深情，也是海外华侨对祖国的一片拳拳之心。从香港进入广州，她没有去看望年迈的父母，而是在日寇的飞机轰炸下踏上了北去的列车。战争中的列车，时走时停慢如蚁爬，她看到了满目疮痍的祖国和流离失所的父老乡亲。她挤在北上士兵的队伍里，心里只有一个念头：牺牲自己，抗战到底。

68. 廖冰与陕北公学华侨女生陈洁心（1938年）

69. 中国女子大学的学生在河边洗脸

女生欢迎新同学的大会不是在礼堂，而是在老乡的晒场上举行，学生们席地而坐。这对从小在新加坡学习的廖冰来说，也是挺不习惯的。她是第一次盘腿坐在地上呢！但她很快就被那新颖的、朝气蓬勃、生动活泼的场面吸引住了。歌声此起彼伏，啦啦队十分活跃，这是她从未有过的经历。突然，目标转向了她，“欢迎南洋同志唱个‘南洋歌’，跳个‘南洋舞’！”“来一个...”“来一个”.....廖冰没有思想准备，不知如何对付才好，脸发红，心发慌。她从小个性很强，不愿意做的事，谁拿她都没有办法。但会场上的啦啦队仍在热情呼唤着她。这是一种无法拒绝也不能拒绝的热情。终于她那颗执拗的心被融化了。在热情的浪潮中，她唱了一首歌《告别南洋》，这是一首表达海外华侨回国参加抗战决心的歌曲。场内的战友们合着歌曲的旋律，为她鼓掌、叫好。接着，她又跳了一个马来西亚的“土风舞”。她发现同学们的热情一个比一个高，他们和她一样，都是风华正茂，都有一腔抗日的热血，在这里，他们的心是和她连在一起的。这是她在南洋所追寻不到的氛围。廖冰把这个激动心弦的场面，写信告诉了南洋的战友，后来，听说他们把她的信在新加坡怡保进步报纸作为陕北通讯刊登了。学校的华侨同学还成立了联谊会组织，主任是印尼归侨张国坚，他参加过长征，是分校政治部主任，给廖冰所在的女生队讲游击战争课，同学们都很敬爱他。副主任是泰国华侨朱瘦林同志，廖冰当选为秘书长。华侨同学有近百人。他们的学习课程有：民族统一战线、中国革命问题、游击战争、民众运动和军事训练等。

很多人从这里奔赴了抗日的前线。

据统计，从海外回国参加抗日的青年知识分子有 3000 多人。

大批青年妇女走出家门，走向社会，她们在寻求民族解放的同时，也在寻找自己新的落脚点和归宿。吞食妇女的旧制度随时都在威胁着她们，她们需要一个创造和发展自身文化的团体和机会。新的价值观与旧的价值观随时在碰撞。即使是受过中等或高等教育的女性也有一个重新认识社会、认识自己的过程。有不少人经受不住艰苦的战争条件的考验，又返回了原来的出发地。廖冰曾劝阻过她们，也为此惋惜过。

## 70. 抗大女学员在进行军事训练

1939 年 7 月 20 日，是中国妇女运动史上值得纪念的日子。也是廖冰至今记忆犹新日子。中国女子大学在毛泽同志倡议下成立。廖冰被推荐为女大高级班学员。女大的校门被抗日民族统一战线的气氛所笼罩。除了有孙中山先生的遗像，还有当时国民党和陕甘宁边区领导人的画像。国内外妇女运动的领袖蔡特金、克鲁卜斯卡娅、多洛列斯、宋庆龄、何香凝、蔡畅、邓颖超、康克清的画像与革命母亲赵世炎烈士的岳母夏老太太的画像挂在一起，格外引人注目。在开学典礼上毛泽东同志在摆有野花的讲台前发表了重要讲话“女人不仅要培养大批有理论武装的妇女干部，而且要培养大批做实际工作的妇女运动干部。”他发表的著名预言“全国妇女起来之日，就是中国革命胜利之时”，被若干年后的革命实践年所证实。

中国女子大学的阵容是令人瞩目的。中央统站部副部长柯庆施任副校长，曾统帅红军女兵师的张琴秋任教育长。学校设置了马列主义、政治经济学、哲学、中国革命问题、妇女运动理论、军事教育、医药卫生常识等必修课，并以会计、缝纫、新闻写作、外语、教育、戏剧、速记等职业技能训练为选修课。学校的招生简章分发到全国各抗日根据地和国民党统治区，许多女青年通过八路军办事处、地下党和统战关系介绍，穿越敌区，历经艰险，辗转前来。有的女青年为此付出了宝贵的生命。到 1941 年 8 月，学校发展为 13 个班，学生 1000 多人。

令廖冰难忘的是，1940 年 5 月，华侨领袖陈嘉庚先生访问延安的第二天，就到了中国女子大学。廖冰与陈先生的秘书李铁民的女儿是新加坡的同学，被介绍给陈嘉庚，他仔细询问了这位华侨女八路在延安的生活和所见所闻，并同在校的 20 多名华侨女同学进行了风趣而亲切的交谈。他望着一片片的荒山野岭和集合列队的学员问：“你们长年累月就过着这样的大兵生活吗？”女战士们回答：“不这样训练是不能打败日本鬼子的！”陈先生轻声对廖冰等人说：“我担心你们在南洋小姐生活过惯了，来到这黄土高原，荒山野岭的地方经不住啊！”华侨女兵们坦率地告诉这位老前辈：“刚来延安时，是有些不习惯，还闹了不少笑话呢！”陈先生听了她们幼稚而可爱的往事，笑了。这是一群他从未见过的“南洋小姐”，她们有着他熟悉的海外背景和他十分陌生的士兵生活，与她们的见面、相识，使他增加了对共产党和八路军、新四军的了解和同情，消除了他心中的种种疑虑。这不仅促使陈先生将他的巨额投资的天平开始向延安倾斜，华侨女战士更成为他晚年回忆录中的美好形象。

## 71. 抗大四大队女学员在延安山沟学习文化

### 72. 抗大女学员在拆洗棉衣

延安不仅有女子大学，有廖冰上的陕北公学，还有著名的抗日军政大学、马列学院、中央党校、鲁迅艺术学院，它所有的学府都是向女性开放的。江南的新四军军部直属教导总队女生队里，也有华侨女生。

女子学校的创立，不仅为中国妇女运动向更高层次发展准备了人才，也为中国女兵和女性文化的发展奠定了基础。廖冰等四名女学员成为延安《新中华报》（《解放日报》的前身）的记者。以后，又转战到晋西北的抗日前线，参与了《晋绥日报》和《晋南日报》的创办和发展。

像廖冰一样，抗日的女战士们都视延安为她们的再生地。50多个春秋过去了，她们提起延安还是那么亲切和熟悉。为抗战而放弃了高师女中的郝治平，冒着生命危险千里迢迢来到延安，本想“打倒了日本鬼子，再回家乡开封念高师”，但一踏上延安的土地，就再也没想回家的事了。她说：“我被分配到抗大三大队，开始了新的生活。当天晚上，躺在刚垒好的炕上，只觉得身子下面湿漉漉、粘乎乎的。我起身翻开草垫一看，原来是没有干的泥全化了。这时脚上没有好的水泡和冻疮也来捣乱，又疼又痒，我辗转反侧不能入睡，猛地想起了妈妈，我毕竟才15岁。不知不觉泪水淌了下来。我问自己：‘你不是要找共产党吗？怎么找到了反倒想起家啦？真没出息！’第二天清晨，起床号一响，我翻身坐起收拾行装，接着跳下炕要往外跑，谁知冻伤脚一落地，钻心地疼痛，想跑也跑不起来。班长看我走路吃力的样子，心疼地说：‘小鬼，你年纪小，脚有伤，跑不动别勉强，等伤好了再出操吧！’这一说倒使我自强起来，我挺直腰板，立正报告道：‘班长，我的脚伤不重，跑一跑就好了，不信你看。’我故作轻松地迈步向队伍里跑去。我每天瘸着脚出操、背粮、背柴，总觉得身上有使不完的力量。政治学习又把我带到了一个境界。罗迈、成仿吾、洛甫、艾思奇等同志给我们讲马列主义理论、社会发展史、工人运动等，这些理论都是在学校时没有接触过的。他们打开了我的眼界，过去愤世疾俗的情绪，渐渐化为拯救社会的强烈愿望。我打开纸，一字一句地写下了入党申请书。随后，又将名字‘宾儒’改为‘治平’。在这里，我完成了一生中最重要的选择。也决定了我至今还是一名女兵。”

### 73. 郝治平在延安（1938年）

### 74. 中国女子大学学员在打草鞋

75. 在窑洞前的抗大女学员，她们大部分成为妇女全国救护会的组织成员。

76. 太行山抗大分校的女生连干部，后排左起指导员张文、排长、副指导员赤茜（郝治平）

（抗大副校长罗瑞卿摄于1940年）

这些学校中毕业的女兵们，不少人成为独当一面的领导干部。但在她们的回忆录中却极少提及学校中的女性教育及文化活动。这是为什么？她们认为这是不言而喻的。女性的解放和民族的解放是统一的，革命本身成为女性

解放的第一标志。廖冰是有机会并被领导指定过做华侨工作的，但她没有做。她说，那时革命的妇女应该到第一线去工作，而华侨工作被她认为是第二线的工作。郝治平说的更直接：“我后来随抗大到了敌后，曾改名为‘赤茜’。这是一种草的名字，它从根到叶都是红色的。我希望自己像赤茜一样遍体彤红而有生命力。”她也确如自己所说，在整个抗日战争中，先在抗大女生连工作，后与她的丈夫罗瑞卿一起战斗在抗日前线的太行山八路军总部。其次，做男人做的工作，打破封建的男女关系的壁垒，也是当时革命女性的追求。而她们的性别，却在这种追求中，被她们“忽略”了。

77. 女大学员薛明与贺龙、林枫、李井泉、廖汉生在延安中共中央西北局办公室门前（1942年）

78. 抗大女学员奔赴前线

## 9 出现了女兵文化名人和表现女性独立意识的作品

如果把当代中国老一辈的女作家、女记者、女文艺工作者作一番统计的话，我们发现，有近半数抗日战争时期的女兵。

在战争和民族解放的土壤里，成长出一大批优秀的女兵文化名人。当时著名的青年女作家丁玲继她的《莎菲女士的日记》之后，又写出了《三八节有感》、《到前线去》等一批优秀的杂文、纪实文学和小说。女青年罗琼担任《解放日报》“中国妇女”副刊编辑主任。在新华社总社和各分社都有青年女记者，随军报道各战区和抗日根据地的战事和新闻。有的还担任了社长。女诗人莫耶创作的《延安颂》谱曲后在各抗日根据地和“国统区”广为流传。在她们的作品中，充分体现了中国妇女要求独立的主体意识和反对封建宗法制度对妇女压迫的政治主张。觉醒了的中国妇女，开始用自己的眼睛看自己、看家庭、看周围、看社会、看世界。

女兵文化的形成和发展，不仅是一个数量的以集团方式出现的集体的积累，而且是充满战斗锋芒的女性独立意识的集中再现。

79. 延安《解放日报》编辑部工作室（1943年）

80. 新华社苏中分社采编工作会议，二排右二为女记者林子东，会后，照片上的这些人即分赴各战场采访收复敌占区，接受日伪投降的情况（1945年8月）。

81. 《晋察冀画报》排字房的女工作人员

82. 罗琼和她的丈夫薛暮桥（1937年）

83. 罗琼主编的《解放日报》  
《中国妇女》副刊（1942年）

罗琼被新四军选为出席中国共产党第七次代表大会的代表到了延安。她

在中国女子大学作了《驰骋在江南战场的新四军女战士》的报告。她还依据自己多年的理论积累和做妇女工作的经验及体会，编写了《妇女解放教程》，她从社会学的角度分析了妇女社会地位的形成和演变，指出：“在人类发展的各个阶段，由于社会制度的不同，妇女在社会上和家庭里的地位也不同。妇女被压迫，男女不平等，并不是亘古就存在的。”“妇女受压迫，表面上好像是受男子的支配，实质上是受阶级剥削制度的压迫。被剥削的女奴隶、女农民、女工处在社会的最底层，遭受双重压迫。奴隶主阶级、封建地主阶级、资产阶级的妇女，既是各阶级的成员，作为贵夫人参与剥削和压迫，分享劳动者血汗创造的财富；同时她们自身又依附于各自的父亲、丈夫和儿子，成为其附属品。”她提出，妇女解放的实现，既要依靠妇女自身的奋斗，实现阶级的解放；还要依赖整个阶级社会的消亡，实现最后意义上的男女平等。由她主持的《解放日报》“中国妇女”副刊，主张妇女经济独立，号召妇女走向社会参加生产，参加抗日，反对国民党反动派提出的做“贤妻良母，贤夫良父”的卖国主义。毛泽东同志的著名题辞：“深入群众，不尚空谈”就是在1942年应“中国妇女”副刊的要求题写的。

#### 84. 罗琼撰写的妇女理论专著

#### 85. 毛泽东为《中国妇女》副刊题词（1942年3月）

#### 86. 曾克在全国政协第一次会议军队席上（1949年）

女兵们既是战争的参与者，又是战争的记录者。因此她们的文学作品，不仅有强烈的女性特色，而且散发着浓郁的时代感和社会意识。1936年参加革命的女兵杨沫，抗日战争爆发后，来到八路军冀中10分区政治部报社任编辑，后又转到《晋察冀日报》，宣传和报道抗日故事。她根据自己的亲身经历写出的带有自传体的长篇小说《青春之歌》，在中国的读者中引起了轰动。一个叫林道静的少女，怎样背叛了封建家庭，走向革命的故事，成了很多少女的青春楷模。这部小说被拍成电影，在中国家喻户晓。她在很大意义上告诉妇女：要解放自己，首先要打碎那个束缚妇女的封建社会。否则，即使摆脱了家庭的束缚，还会堕入封建社会的深渊。这部小说，不仅是一个苦闷的女学生精神觉醒的奋斗篇，也是一代抗战女兵从女学生转变为女战士的心路过程和苦难经历的文学再现。女兵曾克，1938年活跃在第五战区文化工作团，她的战地报告、小说、话剧等，不少刊登在茅盾先生主编的香港《文艺阵地》和进步刊物《自由中国》和《文艺月报》上，后集结成报告文学集《在汤阴火线》、《在战斗中》。解放战争中，她作为新华社记者随第二野战军参加了淮海、渡江、进军西南诸战役，她的《走向前线》、《挺进大别山》就是这些战役的实录。她说：“战争锻炼了我，为革命献身的烈士和无私、无畏、机智的英雄指战员教育了我，我在连队里、火线上，做我能做的各种工作：战场救护，传递消息，动员担架和修工事，给战士读写家信，起草立功喜报，总结作战经验材料等。在生命攸关的时刻，指战员们忘记了我是一个女兵，与我偎挤在一个山凹里、门洞中休息，他们怕弹片落在我身上，用身子挡住我，还背我渡过没腰的河水。我不放过行军、作战、休息中的一分一秒的时间，在膝盖、马背和弹药箱上，用在敌人阵地拾到的公文纸（翻面）、黄裱纸订成的小本子上，记录材料，写下新闻、通讯、日记、报告文学等约

二三十万字。”她说：“这是我一生里最重要、最宝贵的年代，也是我创作实践最充实的阶段。”

87. 杨沫 1946 年于张家口

88. 抗敌剧社小演员田华与冀东摄影事业的开创者雷烨（沙飞摄于 1942 年）

女诗人莫耶是随着上海救亡演出队到延安的。她回忆说：“当时，我才 19 岁。延安是孕育我乐观向上性格的深厚土壤，是培养革命乐观主义精神的温床。我走路想跳，张口想唱。大家歌声和着歌声，歌声引着歌声。歌声就像生活中的空气、阳光，没有歌声，生活便会窒息。我学着各种新歌，唱着很多抗战歌曲。有生以来，什么时候唱过这样多的歌呀！封建家庭的束缚，黑暗社会的压迫，帝国主义的侵略，国民党反动政府的迫害，曾使我感到阴霾漫天，前途茫茫。我那时虽然也唱，但唱的是悲哀的歌、愤怒的歌、反抗的歌。从上海到延安唱的则是救亡的歌。但一到延安，心情是这样舒畅，胸怀是这样开阔，笑声是这样开朗，歌声是这样坦荡。苏联卫国战争中的歌曲《快乐的人们》：‘快乐的歌声随着歌声而跳荡，快乐的人们神采飞扬……’是我经常挂在嘴边的歌。不仅是我，几乎是所有延安的青年共有的心情。虽然每个青年各有不同的经历，但谁不是经过艰难曲折，苦闷彷徨，才千里迢迢来投奔革命圣地的呢？延安的生活是我们一生的转折点。想到这里，我总想用自己的心声、自己的激情，唱一支歌颂延安的歌。”于是，有了那支流传战地，流传至今的歌曲《延安颂》：

夕阳辉耀着山头的塔影，  
月光映照着河边的流萤，  
春风吹遍了坦平的原野，  
群山结成了坚固的围屏。  
哦！延安，  
你这庄严雄伟的古城，  
到处传遍了抗战的歌声。

……

无数的人和无数的心，  
发出了对敌人的怒吼，  
士兵瞄准了枪口，  
准备和敌人搏斗。

……

女兵文化的特点不仅是它表现和记述了当时的战地生活，打破了几千年来那种小女人的小感情的家庭女性文化，更重要的、也是它之所以作为独立文化的标志在于它无论从内容和形式上都成为中国女兵的心灵和人生的整体再现。

89. 女导演王萍

从文化意义上说，女兵，成为很多中国妇女修身强己的标准，成为她们精神青春的支柱。谢冰莹在她的《从军日记》中写道：“我们的生活再痛快没有了，虽然在大雪纷纷的冬天，或烈日炎炎的夏季，我们都要每天上操，过着完全和士兵一般的生活，但谁也不觉苦。”她热爱这样的生活，“平均每天至少要走八九十里路，晚上有时睡在一张门板上，有时睡在一堆稻草里。”她说：“在这个伟大的时代里，我忘记了自己是女人，从不想到个人的事，我只希望把生命贡献给革命，只要把军阀打倒了，全国民众的痛苦都可以解除，我只希望跑到战场上去流血，再也不愿为着自身的什么婚姻而流泪叹息了。”《从军日记》被林语堂先生译成英文后，又有法、俄、日等文的版本问世。著名法国作家罗曼·罗兰也向她致函，表示敬意和祝贺。1937年，抗战的炮声又把她从病床上赶到了前线。她母亲病故不久，父亲又患重病，然而她不顾感情的创伤和亲情的挽留，立即发动妇女到前线为伤兵服务。这是她一生最快乐的经历之一。在抗日战争的烽烟里，谢冰莹跑遍了运河东西、长江南北、黄河流域，在汉口作过“前线归来”的讲演；在重庆为《新民报》编辑副刊《血潮》；在西安主编《黄河》；出版了《五战区巡礼》、《新从军日记》、《在火线上》、《战士的手》、《姊妹》、《梅子姑娘》、《写给青年作家的信》、《抗战文选集》、《在日本狱中》、《女兵自传》等著作。直到她的晚年，仍记挂着写《女兵自传》续集，被人称为“不老的女兵”。

抗战女兵菡子，更是一个将女兵生涯融化在灵魂中的女性。本世纪50年代，她又作家的身份奔赴抗美援朝的战场，在著名的上甘岭坑道里战斗了40多个昼夜。她的著作《前方》、《记忆之珠》大量记载了她的军旅见闻和生活。这种女兵的情结，不仅是她取之不尽的创作源泉，也成为她度过艰难岁月的精神财富。她在散文《我与万妞》中有一段不同寻常的记载：“1959年，我因莫须有的‘右倾’罪被斗了五个昼夜，每当曙光来临之前的黑夜中，伴随我的竟是我心爱的小万妞（一个被新四军搭救的女孩）。斗争告一段落，离国庆只有五天了。我决心丢下‘检查’，立即动手写《万妞》，那不是写，而是把我的泪水化作墨汁，一起倾泻在稿纸上。表达感情的语句，犹如泉涌一般喷薄而出，这写的是我的信念，我的忠诚。仿佛一个赤着脚的女孩，在百折不挠地追赶自己的部队，而党不会也不能舍弃这样一个女儿。我边写边改，9000字的小说，到第二天晚上就抄改完毕，我像在云岭的山溪中经过洗滌那样地清新愉快。”现年已古稀的菡子，患脑血栓，曾两次中风。“走路摇摇晃晃，不得不借助于拐杖，开始是友人送的木棒，每想起原有的铁杖，觉得不是一回事，上面刻的‘黄山纪念’之类，也不能引起我对上甘岭的回忆。我变得羞怯了，正如我失去了青春年华，与拐杖联想的不过是一个老人。凡一站以上我都要去挤车，有次被人把我的拐杖踢出车门；又一次我的拐杖碰着位女士的腿，她喳喳呼呼嚷了好一会。好像我真的打了她一样。这次从车上下来，我决意把拐杖束之高阁，让锻炼来保持我原来的风姿。”她不服老，因为她是女兵。她说：“哪怕我拄着拐杖，也体现我在战地特殊的风采，一个不可轻视的女兵。”

90. 菡子在朝鲜志愿军战士机枪掩体里（1952年）

## C 章 硝烟中的“和平鸽”

解放战争和抗美援朝战争时期的女兵（1946—1953）



## 10 身上的伤痕是光荣的奖证——解放战争时期的女兵（1946—1949）

1947年春，华东野战军第一纵队隆重召开首届庆功大会，表彰宿北、鲁南、莱芜三大战役的800多名功臣。庆功大会在山东省胶济县举行。莱芜战役中，华东野战军6个纵队歼灭敌人5万多，解放了胶济县20多个城镇。纵队司令员叶飞总结了战斗经验之后，把话题转到一名女兵的身上，他说：“我想，如果全纵队的医务人员，都以她为榜样，那么以后战斗中，一定不会丢掉一个伤兵，一定都会医治好，不会有一个伤兵叫苦。我说她不仅立了功，她应当成为全纵队的模范医务人员，你们赞成吗？”万名指战员齐声回答：“赞成！”她，就是特等功臣，女卫生员蒋南屏。在宿北战役期间，蒋南屏所在的三旅直插敌人的心脏，保证了整个战役的胜利。蒋南屏紧跟着部队，在自己负伤的情况下，两次冲进被敌机轰炸着火的民房，抢救出负伤的战友。她没有把自己看成是伤员，照样抬担架、烧开水照顾伤员，硬是跟着团队从苏北打到鲁南，又从沂蒙山打到胶济线，千里跋涉，直到莱芜战役的胜利。鲁南战役结束后，她所在的部队由新四军改编为中国人民解放军。

中国女兵的历史又掀开了新的一页。

1946年6月，蒋介石公然撕毁停战协议、政协决议等一切和平协议，大举围攻中原解放区，并以此为起点，对解放区全面进攻，把空前规模的全面内战，强加在中国人民头上。中国共产党领导解放区军民奋起自卫，英勇抗击蒋介石的进攻。抗日时期的八路军、新四军自1947年3月，改编为中国人民解放军。解放战争中，中国人民解放军如风扫残云般地消灭了国民党800万军队，胜利的捷报一个跟着一个。在中国女兵的历史上，解放军女战士参加的战争规模是最大的。

91. 李兰丁（前）率医疗队在 frontline 抢运伤员（1948年）

92. 丁志辉担任中南援朝医疗手术大队副大队长赴朝参战（1951年）

93. 郭俊卿与朱德总司令（1950年9月）

94. 江汉军区女军医王英强（前）怀孕数月，仍在前线争抬伤员，战斗结束后，王英强流产（1948年）

中国人民解放军按所在驻地华北、西北、华东、东北分为第1、2、3、4、野战军。野战军里的女战士大都在医院、通讯站和文工团里工作。华东野战军中女医务工作者占全体前方医务人员的30%。她们中有人担任纵队卫生部副部长、医院院长、医疗队长、医务主任、室长、指导员、医务员、连队卫生员和转运分站站长等，经常工作在距火线只有数十里的原野山村，在隆隆的炮声中，在美蒋飞机的狂轰滥炸下，不知疲倦地抢救一批批的伤员。她们频繁地随部队转移，保持着每小时10公里的行军速度，并学会了爬墙翻屋、通过障碍、越过沟渠。有时要持续一二百里的急行军赶到指定地点，马上开始抢救治疗工作。被称为“中国的南丁格尔”的女医疗队长李兰丁，跋山涉水，在上有机轰炸、后有敌军追击、连天大雨、水深齐膝的条件下，把500名伤员送到安全地带，她在抬担架过沟时，撞断了两根肋骨。东北野战军39

军野战医院院长丁志辉，参加了锦州、沈阳、天津诸战役，她领导的医院创造了全军治愈率最好的成绩，五次荣获“全军模范”的称号。东北野战军 41 军 398 名女战士，有 140 人立功。在睢杞战役的紧急关头，雷电破坏了指挥部与前方的电台联络，女报务员陈炎从下午 3 时一直工作到晚上 1 时，终于接通了联系，又持续工作到凌晨 4 点，出色完成了任务。获华东野战军一级人民英雄奖章。

女兵们的事迹，在前线和后方被战士们传颂着。

95. 杨玲在豫东战役缴获的敌坦克上（康矛召摄于 1948 年）。

96. 华东野战军女翻译朱青（右一）陪同马歇尔、张治中、陈毅在山东济南视察（龙实摄于 1946 年 3 月 2 日）。

1945 年，八路军热北军分区独立团来了一名奇怪的士兵，他睡觉从不脱衣服，要是在老乡家集体睡土炕，他喜欢挨在边上占个窝，把刺刀枕在头下，枪横在另一个战友的被窝旁放“警戒”。部队出发前，他总是骑马先出去“溜”一圈，再赶回集合，为此，他不知被连长“克”过多少次。更令人不解的是，他从来不和战友们一起上厕所，好奇心驱使着并无恶意的战友们，去揭开这个谜。在一次战斗间隙的打闹时，一位战友突然抱住了他，只见他一扭身，拔出刺刀，大吼道：“谁要给咱开这个玩笑，别怪咱动刺刀！”他跑去找支部书记，哭着告发了那些随便搜身的战友。战友们当做怪癖理解了他。这名有怪癖的士兵，打起仗来，一点也不含糊，策马追击、白刃格斗，历经数十次战斗，荣立特等功一次，大功三次，小功四次。他从战士提升为班长、排长，打完了日军、打老蒋。到著名的辽沈战役时，他已经是机枪连的副指导员了。解放战争史上一场空前的阻击战，在大拉子山展开，国民党投入了 11 个师的重兵，企图解锦州之围。百十发炮弹的呼啸，把阵地炸成了一片火海，子弹打光了，他率领战士们从烈士的手中取出步枪，冲向敌群。惊心动魄的战斗进行了三天三夜。到第四天，兄弟部队上来换防时，全团 2000 多人，好胳膊好腿撤下阵地的指战员不满 500 人。在这场恶战中，他是全团的幸免者之一。战士喜欢这个兵头，他不仅能打仗，还会体贴人。滴水成冰的日子，是他为一个尿床的战士洗被褥，还向老乡觅土方为这人治病。这个战士被感动了，原来，他是怕苦、想家，装的尿床。后来，这个战士在大拉子山战斗中牺牲了。副指导员跟着部队从东北南下打到广东，直到全国胜利。1950 年，长期艰苦转战的他，终于被送进了医院。人们吃惊地发现，他患的是严重的妇女病。这位南征北战 5 年的战斗英雄，竟是女儿之身。她叫郭俊清，刚满 20 岁。她是替父报仇瞒着家人当兵的，为了让部队收留她，她虚报了年龄，更改了性别。战争结束了，她到了懂得谈情说爱的年龄，严重的妇女病，使她不得不做了子宫全切手术。她拒绝了在战争中与她建立深厚感情的男性伙伴赤胆忠心的追求，把自己的爱情之火无情地掐灭了。她有她的理论，就像当年女扮男装一样。为了战争，她牺牲了一个女人应有的一切。

97. 女记者戈扬采访军调处执行小组国民党代表（康矛召摄于 1946 年）

98. 三野文工团的女兵在战壕里度过 1949 年元旦

99. 第二野战军文工团女战士在进军西南的英模大会上

100. 在进军大西南中，文工团的女兵在浦镇火车站欢送 99 分队远行。

101. 19 兵团政治部组织部干部刘平和金岚解放西安后在部队驻地（1950 年）

102. 西北野战军文工团女兵在荔北战役中为伤员洗血衣

103. 进军新疆途中的女战士徒步横跨戈壁滩

104. 18 军女战士到达西藏后，向群众散发传单

就在郭俊清随东北野战军结束平津战役；就地休整期间，位于中原的洛阳战役的帷幕即将落下。部队的紧急集合号响了，一名女兵慌忙地从老乡的屋里钻了出来。她用手举着的高粱秆上，挑着滴水的胶片，跑进了急行军的行列。她就是解放战争中唯一的女摄影记者杨玲。她身背的照相机是 1943 年打莒县时缴获日军的战利品。从 1946 年发表第一幅照片《联合国救济总署人员参观山东军区幼儿园》起，她的足迹始终跟随着华东战场的每一次战役。1949 年 1 月 10 日，历时两个多月的淮海战役已近尾声，大片的村庄经过反复的战争拉锯，到处是断壁残垣。忙了一天的杨玲，午夜才找到一处残存的牛栏歇脚。她和战友们每天都被胜利的捷报鼓舞着，她随部队从许昌打到漯河，又从开封打到洛阳。这是歼敌最多的一次战役，国民党精锐部队黄伯韬、杜聿明兵团全军覆没。她倒在草堆里，听着牛嚼草声，闻着牛粪的臭味，曳光弹在低空划着亮弧。突然，部队骚动了：“敌人的坦克逃跑了！”杨玲闻声而起，她从骑兵团直奔战车大队，翻身越上了冲在前面的一辆坦克，举起了手中的照相机。战士们看她是个女兵，生怕她掉下去，便用身体将她围住。她稳稳地站在坦克上，按动了一次次快门，将追截敌坦克的过程全部拍了下来，为战争史上最大的歼灭战——淮海战役，划了最后一个句号。

1948 年，全军闻名的女医疗队长李兰丁，风尘仆仆地来到了位于河北平山县西柏坡的中共中央所在地，向党中央汇报了华东前线的情况，特别是华东女战士的事迹。邓颖超同志在感动之余，写了《向华东野战军前线战地工作的女干部致敬》的文章。文中详细介绍了蒋南屏、丁惠清、李兰丁、姚健等同志，她充满激情地写道：

“你们活着的，身上的伤痕将永远是你们光荣的奖证。那些牺牲了的烈士，她们的英名将永远活在人们的心中。你们是中国人民的优秀女儿，你们是人解放军的好干部，是中国妇女的光荣！”

105. 进军西藏的女兵，在仙人桥上转运粮食。

106. 参加土改的解放军女战士

11 硝烟中的“和平鸽”——中国人民志愿军女兵（1950—1953）

1950年10月，当志愿军战士唱着军歌跨过鸭绿江的时候，在这支威武的队列中，只有极少数的女兵。

贺伟，这个从抗日战争起跟随八路军115师的女兵，就是在这时脱离自己的部队的。那是1950年冬天的一个上午。部队开了赴朝作战誓师大会，贺伟和她的战友们庄严宣誓：抗美援朝，保家卫国。晚上，部队即将开赴朝鲜，首长找她谈话，要她留在祖国，立即到北京总政治部报到，学习文化知识，参加新中国的建设。她哭了，她不愿意离开自己的部队。多年的战争生涯，已经使她和自己的部队休戚相关，融为一体了。她不愿意，不愿意！但这是命令，军人是以服从命令为天职的。她含着眼泪告别了去前方的战友和带兵的丈夫。

这是一场与以美军为主的世界最强大的联合国军交战的立体战争。彭德怀元帅率军出征时，毅然将非保障部队的女兵留在了国内。曹欣，15军文工团长，作了很多艰巨的工作，才把他的女团员们“安抚”在国内的留守处。当时，他心里也不大想得通，女兵们曾经给战士们带来多少欢乐啊！他甚至不能想象，舞台上没有女兵，那些动人的歌舞将如何表现。他带领文工团随部队以每天近100里的速度向前线开进，当敌人的飞机俯冲着向地面滥炸时，他才领会了彭德怀元帅的决心：我们的女兵，应该让她们享受新中国的和平了。

战争已经把中国女性锤炼得成熟了。她们的翅膀早已穿过家庭的狭窄天地，在更广阔的空间遨游。朝鲜前线的战事，再次牵动了中国女性的心。她们纷纷写申请书、血书要求参战。有一位年轻的女性叫张尉民，同刚生下婴儿的母亲。她说：“做母亲的，谁不疼爱自己的孩子啊，可是当孩子的生命受到威胁时，我怎么能只顾自己的孩子啊！抗美援朝，是为了保卫千千万万的孩子而战。”就这样，到了1951年3月，许多年轻的母亲、年轻的姑娘放弃了和平美好的生活，告别了亲人、恋人，勇敢地走向了前线。她们似一群衔着橄榄枝的“和平鸽”，胸怀着爱国主义和国际主义的崇高理想，“飞”进了硝烟弥漫的战场。

107. 开赴朝鲜战场的志愿军女兵（1951年）

108. 志愿军女战士在林中伐木修筑防空洞

109. 穿行在密林中的志愿军女兵

110. 志愿军47军文工团在防空洞为战士演出

四川姑娘刘若冰在人朝时刚满17岁。她被分配到军野战医院作护士。长途行军，她和许多姐妹们的脚都打了水泡。但谁都不愿意说出来，生怕被送回国内或留下休息。有的姑娘脚裂了口，疼得钻心，就用大米饭揉成团填进裂口中。人朝是得来不易的权利，有人不客气地说：“女兵没有用！”姑娘们就是不服这口气。天下着大雨，部队在雨中行军，刘若冰脚底的水泡被雨水浸破了，与路上灌进鞋里的泥搅在一起，开始是难挨的疼痛，渐渐地疼痛变成了麻木，两只脚沉得像秤似的。班长郭小江见她走路的样子，关切地部：

“行吗？”她点点头，冲班长笑了一下。疲劳中的女兵，把所有的问话和动作都简化了。途中休息，没有遮掩所和雨具。刘若冰枕在路边的一块石头上就睡着了。雨打在她的脸上，细心的班长拿出喝水的杯子放在额头上接水，她全然不知。直到发出集合号音，那只放在额头上的水杯已经接满了雨水。

#### 111. 志愿军女战士在雪地里拾柴取暖

战争随时都在考验着这位刚入伍的新战士。第五次战役，是朝鲜战场打得最苦、时间最长、部队损失最大的战役。弹坑连着弹坑，到处是燃烧着尸骸。敌人的地面炮火封锁了公路，运送伤员的汽车和担架队把她们和后方医院隔绝了。17岁的女兵和她的战友抬着比她们自身还重的伤员向后方转移。当她再次返回时，院长叫住了她：“这里有38名轻伤员，决定要你一个不少地将他们带回后方。其他人由我带领去执行新的任务。”刘若冰第一次单独接受任务，不知说什么好，她学着老同志的样子，向院长行举手礼：“坚决完成任务，保证有我就有伤员。”这是一句他们入朝后常常挂在嘴边的誓言，此刻，她才感受到它真正的分量。38名伤员几乎每一个都比她年长，说是轻伤员，只是与那些昏迷不醒的重伤员相对而言。刘若冰清醒地知道，他们的左右两翼都是敌人，有的地带呈犬牙交错状；有的地带是敌人的封锁区。敌机的狂啸声、炮弹的爆炸声、机枪的扫射声不时地在他们的耳边轮番地响着。他们随时都有可能与敌人相遇。刘若冰身上除了炒面袋和10几个伤员的水壶，连一颗手榴弹都没有。她第一次、也是认真地设想了牺牲的方式：和敌人硬拼，与敌人同归于尽；凭她这个姑娘是不可能的。没有武器的士兵在战场上，就如兔子掉进狼窝里。头一次带兵的姑娘一时没有了主意。“到时再看吧！”她对自己说，如果在平路被敌人抓住，就学朝鲜的丹娘赵玉照；如果是在高山悬崖，就学狼牙山五壮士。当她回头看到38名伤员，她突然感到自己的想法那么幼稚：他们是我的伤员，我不能只想到死，一定要想法走出逆境。刘若冰又恢复了往日的活泼，她唱《青年团员之歌》：“听吧，战斗的号角发出警报……”天渐渐黑了，路标被来往的部队踏得不清晰了。“决不能把伤员带到敌人那里去。”刘若冰告诫自己。每到一個路口，她便让伤员们停下歇息，自己到前方探路，确信无误，再回来接伤员们。为了避免敌人的炮火袭击，她为伤员们做好伪装，并拉开距离，38名伤员，队伍前后长达100米。她时而指挥“卧倒”；时而跑前跑后照顾体弱的兄长。该吃饭了，她解下身上的面袋和水壶，为他们调制炒面。三天过去了。当刘若冰带领38名伤员来到后方医院时，她竟一句话也说不出来了。她的好友一把抱住她：“我们都快急死了，还传说你被俘了呢！”

#### 112. 志愿军女战士徐秀云在火线上抢救伤员

#### 113. 第一批女坦克手（1952年）

志愿军女战士几乎个个都似一尊战地“女神”。女军医田静所在的医院接受了一名叫王连胜的重伤员。他腹部受伤，小便解不下来，如不立即施行排尿，就有生命危险。前线没有导尿管，田医生毫不迟疑地用自己的嘴代替导尿管，前后吸了四次，终于使王连胜度过了危险期。

女护士李本祥在给伤员送饭的路上，遇到 9 架敌机，她完全有时间跑进防空洞里躲避，但她想，那里有伤员，一跑，会暴露目标。于是，她就地卧倒，任敌机在她的身边狂轰滥炸。伤员们安然无恙，李本祥却受了重伤，右臂骨折，左臂中了 6 颗子弹。

文工团员解秀梅在前线的坑道里为战士们演出后，便协助医护人员抬担架后送伤员，此时正值零下 30 的严冬。当他们跋山涉水将伤员送到目的地时，发现伤员的大头鞋完全冻结在脚上，脱不下来了。解秀梅解开自己的棉衣，把伤员的双脚抱在胸前，用自己的体温融化了伤员冰冻的双脚……

#### 114. 在前线的对敌广播站

志愿军女战士们不仅用她们的行动赢得了赴朝参战的权利，而且赢得了前线指战员和祖国人民的爱戴。1952 年，刘若冰等 21 名女战士参加志愿军归国代表团，受到了国家领导人的接见。中国人民解放军总司令朱德拉着刘若冰的手问这位小同乡：“在朝鲜你就穿这身棉衣吗？”“是。”“不冷吗？”“不冷！”她兴奋得说不出话来。眼前的一切就像是一个梦。在那片炮弹轮番轰炸的焦土上，她和她的战友不止一次地勾画过祖国和平的美景，她们无时不在思念着祖国，思念着亲人。眼下回到了祖国，见到了亲人，这些饱受磨难的女战士，心里只有一个念头：让祖国人民放心，让亲人放心！她们走到哪里都不讲自己受的委屈和痛苦，她们讲志愿军战士们的胸怀；讲战场上的英雄主义；讲朝鲜人民军和朝鲜人民与志愿军的鱼水之情……在与总司令的对话中，刘若冰是撒了“谎”的。这是真诚的“谎言”。刘若冰和战友们回国以后，换了解放军的新军衣。在朝鲜战争中，我们的女兵们和所有的部队一样，连洗澡的机会都没有。志愿军归国代表团进入祖国大门时，谁也没有认出他们就是“最可爱的人”，每个人的军装都被血迹和硝烟熏染得看不出颜色了。用刘若冰的话说：“我们脏得就像一群火头军（对炊事员的称呼）！”几个月后，刘若冰和她的战友们带着祖国人民的亲切问候，重返朝鲜前线。

祖国像强大的母亲，成为战士可依赖的后盾。

#### 115. 志愿军归国代表团解秀梅请毛泽东签名

#### 116. 志愿军女战士与朝鲜阿妈妮

## D 章 女性的解放

### 一座血染的纪念碑

## 12 跨越黑暗的代价

### 117. 游曦着男装的照片（1927年）

1927年12月13日夜，广州起义的枪声逐渐稀落。珠江北岸的天字码头前，一面镰刀斧头的红旗依然在战火硝烟中飘扬。旗帜下是一个与总部失去联系的女兵班。一位19岁的女战士，举起拼弯了的刺刀，向受伤的战友们说：“只要还有一个人在，也要保住这面红旗！”敌人终于发现，守卫这个最后堡垒的是几个年轻的女人。“抓活的！”他们叫喊着，一窝蜂地拥上来。然而，他们万没想到，这是一群不甘屈服的女兵。指挥战斗的班长游曦是黄埔军校女生队的学员。她们一面与敌人举枪格斗，一面向后撤退。格斗声停止了，女生班的战士全部壮烈牺牲。敌人将游曦的遗体截成数块，放在码头上“示众”。

我们在昔日的战场上寻觅着，仿佛仍然能够听到那位19岁的女兵班长尚在少女青春期的尖嫩嗓音。

中国女兵用自己的血肉之躯燃起了焚烧封建制度的圣火。在中国悠久的历史中，第一次，也是最坚决的一次向社会公开展示了中国妇女的独立人格。在艰苦漫长的革命征程中，牺牲了多少优秀的姐妹？！由于当时条件的限制，我们已无法准确地统计出她们的人数。据现代中国历史的记载：为新中国的独立和解放，先后牺牲的有近3000万人。这个数字中，有成千上万的女战士，她们的牺牲之惨烈，在中国历史上是绝无仅有的。

直到今天，我们仍然可以在照片上，在纪念馆中看到“打土豪，分田地”、“一切权力归农会”这些当年遍布井冈山的宣传标语。但是，我们不会想到这些标语许多是出自一个红军女战士之手。

她叫伍若兰，曾是湖南耒阳县女界联合会的负责人，1926年的共产党员。她是耒阳政府通缉的要犯。罪状是：带头宣传抵制日货，声援上海工人大罢工，组织宣传队支援北伐战争，领导打土豪，斗劣绅。1928年2月，朱德、陈毅率领的中国工农革命军第一师到了湖南，伍若兰参加了中共耒阳县委领导的武装起义，随后，带领一批青年学生参加了红军，后来与朱德结了婚。

她并非与朱德结婚才受人尊敬。她是红军中的书法家，也是闻名井冈山的双枪手。她经常身背两支手枪，手提一支毛笔，颇有儒将之丰采。1929年2月的一个清晨，刚刚起，还没有来得及梳洗的伍若兰，发现驻地附近的丛林中有异样的响动，“不好！被敌人包围了。”她报告了朱德军长，便带领身边少量的士兵投入了战斗。她的双枪左右开弓，敌人应声倒下。敌人的机枪对准了这个“重点”，伍若兰负了重伤，但她手中的双枪却没有停止击发。敌人从阵地后面冲上来将她按住，才发现这个奇特的对手是一名女子。重伤的伍若兰同敌人展开了肉搏……当她清醒后，发现自己已被关押在敌人的监狱里。

118. 向警予烈士，中国最早的妇女运动领导者，曾任中央妇女部长，1928年被俘，同年牺牲于武汉。



“她是朱德的妻子！”敌人从俘虏中得知这个情报，叫她供出红军内部情况和行动计划，供出当地共产党的情况。伍若兰一字一顿，痛骂和揭露敌人。她得到的是加倍疯狂的严刑拷打。2月12日，遍体鳞伤的伍若兰被绑赴赣州卫府刑场处决。临刑前，人们从伍若兰虚弱的胸腔中，听到的最后一句话是：“红军万岁！”围观的百姓流泪了。行刑后，敌人把她的头割下，吊在一个架子上面，用大字写上“共匪首领朱德妻子伍若兰”，放在竹筏上，顺赣江漂下，“沿江示众”。

正可谓“提着脑袋干革命”。

人称那时红军的革命力量为“星星之火”，女红军更像火中之星。在井冈山，像伍若兰这样的红军女战士只有百余名。她们的牺牲往往比男人更为壮烈。在红军的历史中，本来有许多女兵的血，但是，由于种种原因，她们长久地被埋在历史的深处。

1933年夏天，蒋介石委任刘镇华为“鄂豫皖三省剿共总司令”，调动军队对红25军“清剿”。大别山区的群众被杀死、饿死的不计其数。从仰天窝到毛草尖，几十里地方变成了“无人区”。红25军医院转移到鄂豫边界的仰天窝一带的深山老林之中。女红军战士周东屏与她的战友将十几名伤员分散藏在周围的山洞里，一名17岁的女护士在山里寻找野菜，不幸被敌人抓住了。

饿得皮包骨头的女战士被反绑在一棵枯树上，刺刀对准了她的喉咙。

“说，伤员藏在哪里？”

“你告诉他们，红军已经被包转了，让他们自动出来投降。”

年轻的姑娘，一声不吭。一阵阵的皮带抽打、脚踢，她昏死过去，又醒来，还是会么也不说。敌人在她面前架起了树枝，要用火烧死她，她仍然没有说一句话。大火燃起来了，火焰无情地吞噬着她的衣服、头发、皮肉，敌人听到的只是她惨绝的声音。半个多世纪过去了，周东屏仍然清晰地记得山洞外皮鞭的抽打声、火焰的燃烧声和这个女兵的惨叫声。她说：“我的心都要碎了。要知道，她才17岁，生活对她才刚刚开始啊！”当时社会公行的道德标准，并没有要求一个17岁的女孩子，选择这样的生存方式。

119. 何纯英，1927年入团，1930年春在汉口牺牲，年仅18岁。

120. 1928年3月，女战士陈铁军和她的战友周文雍在刑场上举行了婚礼。在生命的最后时刻，陈铁军凝视着和她生死与共的周文雍，高声讲演：“亲爱的同胞们！姐妹们！我和周文雍同志的血就要洒在这里了。为了革命的利益，我们顾不得谈个人的爱情。今天，我要向大家宣布：我们就要举行婚礼了。让反动派的枪声，来做我们结婚的礼炮吧。同志们，永别了！未来是属于我们的！”他们牺牲的消息和临刑前的合影照片，曾刊登在香港的几中日报和日本的《读卖新闻》上。

还是在大别山，女红军战士周淑英，带领群众坚壁粮食。敌人来了，她没能撤出，被叛徒出卖。敌人抓住她后，问她粮食在哪里，说出粮食的地点，她就可免于死。她没有说。她知道，粮食意味着战友们的生命。敌人割掉了她的乳房，又把她砍成几段，暴尸于光天化日之下。

女兵和其他女性一样，她们是女人、母亲、妻子；她们有别于其他女性

的是，她们是兵，是战士，有的还是战场上的指挥员。1929年7月的一个晚上，4000余名敌人向女司令胡筠率领的游击队进攻。正当山头上弹雨纷飞、硝烟弥漫的时刻，指挥阵地上传来了婴儿的啼哭，胡筠的女儿在火线上诞生了。敌人的第五次进攻开始的，她被战友们用箩筐抬着继续指挥战斗，把敌人打得落荒而逃。今天，还有几个人记得这位女司令呢？讲到平江起义时，人们也许会提到彭德怀大将军，而不会想到还有一位女司令胡筠。而正是她1928年和彭德怀配合作战，才取得了平江起义的胜利。她也曾是黄埔军校最为活跃的女生之一，是当时少有的战地女指挥员之一。敌人一直扬言要活捉她，到处张贴她的相片，悬赏重金通缉她。在一般人的眼中，她是太出格了。不仅违背“出必掩面，窥必藏形”的古训，而且领导着一支以男人为主的武装队伍。她同样是中国封建社会的刀下“鬼”。她于1934年1月牺牲，年仅36岁。

### 121. 女司令胡筠

女司令胡筠在阵地上生下孩子后，还可以坐在箩筐里指挥战斗，这一在今天不可想象的情景，在红军时期却算得上是一种“幸福”。而大多数女兵，听到第一声婴儿的啼哭时，就马上要面临骨肉生死离别的痛苦。1936年冬天，大别山区下了一场历史上罕见的大雪，碗口粗的树杈也被积雪压断了。到处是冰凌，到处可听到被雪压断树枝的断裂声。红军妇女排几十名女兵被敌人围困在这个冰雪的世界里。女兵张敏的女儿诞生了。

战友们既为她高兴，也替这个婴儿发愁。几十名女兵已经几天没吃东西了，嗷嗷待哺的婴儿饿得日夜啼哭。孩子的啼哭声随时会引来敌人。

孩子出生第六天的清晨，战友们听到张敏的呼唤，只见她紧紧地抱着自己的女儿，衰弱的身子靠在山洞的石壁上，孩子安静地躺在她的怀里。

孩子被捂死了。

敌人没有来。

排长袁翠明火了：“张敏同志，你，你疯啦？”

张敏埋着头，低声地说：“孩子是我身上掉下的肉……可是眼下……”

六天来，她总是沉默不语，孩子饿得哭，她也跟着流泪。她在附近找了一个山洞，钻进去了。她说，万一被敌人发现了，不会影响同志们。女兵们轮流去照顾她，把找到的一点食物用牙磨成面糊喂给这个可爱的小生命。姐妹们开玩笑地说，她是我们女兵排的孩子。

大别山的风雪中，女兵们挖了一个墓穴，为她们孩子举行了“葬礼”。所有的女兵都哭了。

几十年过去了，张敏同志后来也因病逝世了。没有人记起那个在世上仅活了六天的女婴和她的母亲。

然而她们和我们所有的人一样，曾经在这个世界上生活过。

女兵“消灭”自己孩子的事，在战争年代，并不鲜见。

### 122. 项秦，从武汉撤退时被日军炸死。

### 123. 抗大女学员刘雅龄，在1942年2月日军扫荡太行山时牺牲

长征是人类历史上的第一次，它向世界证明，红军是英雄好汉。但很少人知道，红军中的女战士是以怎样的毅力，怎样的牺牲翻越了那“千山鸟飞绝”的雪山；踏过了那“万径人踪灭”的草地。著名红军女战士、解放后任中华全国妇女联合会主席的蔡畅，在回忆长征时深情地写道：“我们的女战士尽管有钢铁般的意志，但她们的身体毕竟是血肉之躯。长途跋涉、饥寒劳累、雪山风寒、草地水浸，使许多健康的女同志得了妇女病，绝大多数女同志闭了经，有的造成了终生不育。四位女同志带着身孕上了路。行至贵州要分娩，为了赶上行进的队伍，只得忍痛把刚刚出生的婴儿送给他人。在贫瘠荒僻的贵州山野，要找到一个能收养红军后代的人家都很困难。贺子珍同志的婴儿送给了一个瞎眼的孤老太太；曾玉同志的婴儿伴着一张写在身世的字条，留在了一间没有人的空屋子里；而陈慧清同志的婴儿则躺在叫不出地名的山脚下……产妇们得不到休息，得不到营养，连心爱的孩子也不能多看几眼，她们那颗母亲的心该是多么难过啊！”

战争中牺牲了多少做母亲的女兵？牺牲了多少女兵的孩子？

1943年9月15日，日军和汉奸出动了4万多兵力，对晋察冀边区的北岳区抗日根据地进行了历时三个月的“烧光、杀光、抢光”的“毁灭扫荡”，被杀害的群众达8000多人。八路军女兵张力，怀抱着仅三个月的女婴，被敌人抓住。当战友们找到这位从北京参加抗战的大学生时，她身上的衣服已经荡然无存，全身被刺刀捅出的血已经凝固了。战友们顺着地上衣服和碎片和血迹找去，在老百姓的一口大锅里，发现了她的孩子，这个小生命已经被日军活活煮死了！

从印尼远涉重洋投身抗日的女战士李林，是雁北抗日游击队长，后任八路军120师骑兵营教导员。她因作战英勇而闻名敌后。敌人曾悬赏5000元巨款要她的头颅。1940年，在日军“扫荡”晋绥边区时，她率领部队粉碎了日军八次“扫荡”。在第九次反“扫荡”中，她不幸负伤，当敌人喊叫捉活的时，她手执双枪，连续扣动扳机射向敌人。弹药绝尽，她用最后一颗子弹打进自己的喉部，壮烈牺牲。当时，她已是怀孕三个月的母亲。日军用刺刀支解了她的遗体。

#### 124. 印尼华侨李林

战争年代，即使九死一生做了母亲的女兵，在她们的脑海中，也有一块挥之不去的有关生育的阴影。

抗战女兵伊之的大儿子诞生在新中国解放前夕，与他先后降生的还有7名婴儿。然而，这7个孩子都没能成活。有的还没有睁眼就死在敌人的追杀中了。其中一位年轻的母亲精神失常了，部队每到一地，她就疯狂地用手挖土，一边挖，一边呼唤着婴儿的姓名。战友们谁也劝阻不住。她确信能在地下见到自己的孩子。她的双手挖得鲜血淋漓。其他即将临盆的战友，捧着自己的肚子，不知道自己将要面临的命运。伊之永远忘不了战友们是怎样在四面透风的破庙里，在行军途中的树坑里接生出她们的骨肉，又怎样流着眼泪掩埋了刚刚来到人世就迅速消逝的生命。永远忘不了那位精神失常的母亲鲜血淋漓的挖土的双手。她每每谈起，就像是经历一场恶梦。她说：“解放40多年了，我的那个孩子也快年过半百了。可我现在都不曾带，也不敢带大儿子到当年的老战友家去串门。我怕她们看到我儿子后难过。我的儿子是幸

存者，而她们的孩子不在了，这是我永远无法面对的痛苦！”

125. 1943 年大“扫荡”中，惨遭日寇碎尸的阜平罗峪村妇救会主任刘跃梅（叶曼之摄）。

女红军陈琮英虽然是中央五大书记之一、红军第二方面军政委任弼时的夫人，但伴随着她的是一串寻子的脚印和对离散骨肉的无尽思念。1928 年任弼时被捕入狱，陈琮英带着幼女苏民搭乘一辆运煤的火车去长沙营救丈夫。一路上天冷风大，煤灰和煤块不断地飞落到母女二人的身上，小苏民得了肺炎，发起了高烧。还没营救出丈夫，女儿就断了气。1931 年，红军突围西征时，他们又将刚刚出生不久起名湘赣的儿子寄托给老乡，至今下落不明。三儿子出生后，也同哥哥湘赣一样，寄养给老乡，至今生死不详。他们的第四个孩子是远志，出生不满百天，就和母亲一起被国民党囚禁在上海龙华监狱，待被中央营救出狱时，远志已经一岁多了；出狱不久，陈琮英接到周恩来的电报，要她速去苏区。陈琮英只好把刚刚结束“囚徒”生活、年仅一岁多的远志寄养在任弼时的老家。当远志几经周折到延安见到她的父母时，已经 15 岁了。这是她第一次见到自己的父亲。父亲称她“大女儿”，当时，在延安的毛泽东、周恩来、刘少奇等叔叔、伯伯们也都跟着唤她“大女儿”。多年以后，远志才从父母那里知道她并非父母的长女，她不仅有三个从未见面的哥哥和姐姐，而且还有两个永远不能见面的弟弟。而她的母亲陈琮英已经经历了 5 次骨肉亲情的生死决别。5 个儿女都是她生命的一部分啊！1950 年，任弼时在弥留之际，还嘱咐陈琮英“湘赣的消息望继续去打听”。

解放后，车轮滚滚，陈琮英和很多在战争年代失去骨肉的女战士们一样，一次次地重返战争故地，找寻自己的儿女。她们一次次地期待着与自己的儿女相见，又一次次地将眼泪撒在凹凸不平的车辙中。终于，陈琮英找到了收养儿子的老乡，得到的是一件儿子幼年的毛衣。她手捧这件仿佛还留有儿子体温的毛衣，流泪了。她竟找不出一句话对这个死去的孩子说。

### 13 长眠在地下的千古回音

中国女兵在中国社会的发展进程中，始终是超前的女性群体。女兵们坚强而独立的人格，来源于她们对自身不懈的探索 and 追求。也许她们的生活远离我们太久了，以致不少青年人怀疑地问：“这是真的吗？”让我们翻开那些发黄的书信和遗书，与她们作一次心灵的交流，听听那些长眠在地下的英灵们的千古回音吧！

126. 茅丽瑛烈士

127. 茅丽瑛烈士遗墨

1937 年参加“救亡长征团”的茅丽瑛，1939 年被日伪特务暗害，牺牲时，年仅 29 岁。在“救亡长征团”出征时，她有一篇著名的讲演：“我爱我的母亲，但也爱我的祖国。危难中的祖国，是更需要我们年轻的热血呢！我母亲老了。她身边又只有我一个女儿，她爱我，我爱她，我们平时是相依为命的。

但这时不同了，我要为祖国尽最大的力，就得离开她。否则，就不可能投身祖国的怀抱。我为这矛盾难过，但我到底还是决定选择前一条路。当我把这决定告诉她时，她悲伤地哭了。我流着泪跟她解释。你们看我眼睛都哭红了。我母亲的哭声几乎动摇了我的决心，但我想到侵略者强加于我们祖国、我们人民的损害和屠杀，我又坚定了下來。”

#### 128. 孙晓梅烈士

曾经是大家闺秀的孙晓梅，不愿受封建礼教的束缚，与在国民党机关谋事的丈夫离了婚。她在新四军给规劝她的母亲写了一封信，阐述了她对人生、家庭、理想、前途等诸问题的见解：“我是一个有理智和勇气的青年，我不会被人家利用和愚弄。我有我的人生目标、理想前途，我决不会让自己盲目地陷入黑暗的深渊里去。我有我天赋的顽强心，我不怕任何压力、威胁、非议，我能毅然地打碎封建礼教所束缚我的镣铐。我所要的‘名’和‘利’，是大众所需要的‘名’和‘利’，我并不希罕个人的‘名’和‘利’。对于这种问题，在我们的眼睛里看来，实在太平凡了……我们除了为大众谋福利而奋斗外，个人的利益，本来是放在后面的。‘全忠不能全孝’，这是历来的忠臣义士的名言。母亲：请原谅我，不能如你的愿，让我自己去做封建社会下的牺牲品。”

#### 129. 冯和兰烈士

这些毅然从军的女战士，她们本与战争无缘。为了祖国的尊严和自身的解放，她们当了兵，然而，她们的内心深处充满了对侵略战争和侵略者的蔑视。孙晓梅在给姨母的信中说：“‘人非木石，孰能无情’，‘羊跪食乳，尚识天性之恩’，何况人乎！来信读后，心肺实有难言之痛！”“‘谁无父母？提幼奉负。谁无夫妇？如宾如友。谁无兄弟？如足如手。生也何恩，死也何咎？’正因为人类不应该残杀；然人已残杀我，而我不能自卫乎？想三四年來，多少人妻离子散，多少人家破人亡，多少人尸骨分飞，多少人战死沙场。想人生不免一死，不过死得其时而得所值乎！”“梅等不敏，然不愿做时代之落伍人，虽无能，亦必勉力追随历史之轮，如今天生活虽云清苦，愿自勉，决不做民族罪人。”1943年，她被日本宪兵队抓住，宪兵队长本木立即设宴“招待”她，企图软化诱降。孙晓梅识破敌人的诡计，拍案而起，大骂鬼子，并愤然将酒席掀翻。本木恼羞成怒，将她押到龙潭老虎山山坳，残酷地剝掉乳房后再杀死。孙晓梅牺牲时，年仅29岁。

#### 130. 冯和兰生前给组组的书信手迹

#### 131. 身着戎装的赵一曼

被敌人俘虏的女战士倍受侮辱和摧残，她们往往是被反复侮辱后，又遭严刑拷打。即使这样也没有动摇她们的革命信念。她们在不停顿的思索中，熔炼着对人生的信仰和目的的追求。新四军女战士冯和兰被捕入狱后，在给姐姐的信中写道：“希望滋润了狱中枯竭了的生命，虽然这盏希望的明灯，

是如此地微弱的光线，说不定在今朝，在明晚，会被突然吹熄！许多人生前刻苦修行，为的是怕入可怕的地狱。其实，能够入地狱的人还是幸运的，因为佛云：‘我不入地狱谁入地狱？’为了千百万苦难众生，挺身而出步入地狱，佛是何等伟大的行动。”

### 132. 赵一曼生前与她的孩子

这种对人生的参悟，是旧式妇女无法达到的境界。人们在钦佩她们大义凛然的革命壮举的同时，也不能不为她们表现的才华所仰止。

母亲，始终是最高尚的人生形象。战争曾使女兵们无暇顾及她们的儿女，但到了生命的终点时，她们往往还原出令人心碎的女性柔情。

1936年的夏天，在东北日式的窄型铁轨上，一辆飞驰的列车押解着一名死囚犯。她就是黄埔军校女学员、后任东北抗日联军第三军第二团政委的赵一曼。在战斗中，她不幸受伤被俘，在审讯室里，日本特务头子亲自审讯她，又对她施以皮鞭、火烧、竹签钉指等酷刑。解押的火车上，她一言不发，闷热的空气和着车轮碾压铁轨的噪音。突然，她说话了：

“给我一支笔。”

敌人以为这个强硬的女人，在死亡面前动摇了，连忙准备好纸和笔。只见她支撑着虚弱的身体，用那只被打烂的手，一挥而就。

这是写给她儿子的信——

宁儿：

母亲对于你没有能尽到教育的责任，实在是遗憾的事。

母亲坚决地做了反满抗日的斗争，今天已到了牺牲的前夕了！

母亲和你生前是永远没有见面的机会了，希望你，宁儿呵：赶快成人，来安慰你地下的母亲！我最亲爱的孩子呵：母亲不用千言万语来教育你，就用实行来教育你。

在你长大成人之后，希望你不要忘记你的母亲是为国而牺牲的！

一九三六年八月二日

你的母亲赵一曼于车中

她死了。留下了一颗做母亲的心。

### 133. 江竹筠烈士

山西省云周西村，是一座在地图上都没有标志的小村庄。因抚养了一名16岁的小姑娘而名闻全国。她叫刘胡兰，是一位抗日的女战士。在刑场上，她并没有什么豪言壮语，也没有做什么惊天动地的事。面对敌人，她只是从容地问了一句：“我咋个死法？”然后，平静地走向铡刀。她被斩首示众。这个中国农村朴实的女孩子面对死亡的气节，使很多人包括她的长辈为之动容。人们用最大的词汇评价她：“生的伟大，死的光荣”！

1948年，中国人民解放军的隆隆炮声已经震动了封建的蒋家王朝。黎明前夕的重庆集中营里，女战士江竹筠的十指被钉满了竹签子，敌人又对她反复施行灌辣椒水、上老虎凳等酷刑。她手上滴着鲜血，脚上响重镣，摔开特务军士的挟持，那站立的身躯，使整个集中营的难友们为之骄傲。他们用各种方式表达对这位女性的敬意，其中的一首诗这样赞扬道：

你是丹娘的化身，  
你是苏菲亚的精灵，  
不，你就是你，  
你是中华儿女革命的典型。

## E 章 昂首世界的中国女兵

建国后的女兵（1949— ）



## 14 谁持彩练当空舞——空军中的女兵

1949年10月1日，中华人民共和国成立。

1951年，年轻的中国人民解放军空军招收了新中国第一批女飞行员。这批女飞行员共14名。当时，有人嘀咕道：“女人要上天了！”

战争中的女兵用她们的生命和鲜血赢得了和平与胜利，实现了她们梦寐以求的目标：中国妇女从旧社会的附地位变成了国家、社会和家庭的主人。祖祖辈辈在家庭中劳作的中国女人们，开始扬眉吐气。“中国女人可以当兵、打仗，而且打胜仗，为什么不能上天呢！”这就是当时女人们的理论。

1952年3月8日，解放军总司令朱德、全国妇联副主席邓颖超等党、政、军领导人亲临西郊机场，与7000多名首都各界妇女代表一起，为中国第一批女飞行员举行了隆重的起飞典礼。

下午1点整，飞机以单机跟进的队形飞越天安门上空，接受祖国人民的检阅。这时，正在中南海办公室开会的毛泽东走出来，抬头望天，以平缓幽默的语气说：“第一批女飞行员从我们上飞过了！”

从那时起至今，已经有六批、290名女飞行员上了天。她们不仅掌握了习行、领航、通讯、机械、跳伞、滑翔等复杂技术，有的还当了试飞员、机长，被评为特级飞行员。

30年前，山东泰安一中的一位女学生被选为中国第三批女飞行员。离开家时，当矿主的父亲和母亲把他们心爱的女儿送了一程又一程，千叮咛万嘱咐：“到了部队好好干，早日飞上蓝天，为俺劳动人民争气，为祖国争光！”年轻的姑娘没有忘记父母的嘱托，她当了特级飞行员，又晋升为空军航空兵某部飞行副师长，她就是岳喜翠。她先后飞过五种机型，安全飞行5300多小时，航程近200多万公里，伴随着她的是紧急空运、军事演习、科学实验、抢险救灾和人工降雨等一串常人无法体验地紧张和艰辛。1978年担任机长的岳喜翠，成功执行了首次飞机大面积人工降雪的任务，填补了我们航空气象史的空白。1993年5月，她又率领三个机组飞赴上海，完成了中国首次人工消雨试验。

134. 1952年3月8日朱德总司令亲自主持第一批女飞行员上天仪式后与她们合影

135. 1953年3月24日毛泽东、刘少奇、周恩来在中南海接见第一批女飞行员。

几乎每个女飞行员的身后，都有一个常人无法比拟的记录。而她们付出的代价也是一般人所不能想象的。与蓝天的浩瀚相比，人是渺小和孤独的。她们大多数不爱讲话。“说什么？你们想知道什么？”她们这样询问每个来访者。你只有和她们聊天，聊得投机时，才能从她们的“唠叨”中略知有关空中生活的一二。刘华凤、李友娥说，她们飞的“安-26”上没有厕所，男的可以用水桶对付，女的就难了，所以，每次飞行之前都不敢喝水。伍东征、刘晓莲说，作为女人，孩子从小不在身边，不是不爱，是没有机会爱，偶尔和孩子见一面，孩子连妈都不喊，心里真难过。王春、程晓健说，例假按规定不飞，但她们自己很少执行规定。不仅如此，有的姐妹怀孕了，也照样执

行任务。

“为什么”

“你问蓝天吧。”

她们热爱蓝天，热爱飞行。不让飞了，心里还很难过。最早的飞行员这样说。

她们贡献给蓝天的有仅是青春和家庭的幸福，有的甚至献出了生命。让我们记住她们的名字：陈志英、韩淑琴、潘隽茹、杨艳彩。

女飞行员们一批批地向高空挑战，把一个个成功的记录写在自己的履历表上，写在令人畏惧的高度上。

136.担任空军某航校副参谋长的第一批女飞行员武秀梅（谭先德摄于1984年）

137.第一位女试飞员张玉梅（谭先德摄于1994年）

138.女飞行员在训练中（谭先德摄）

139.航空兵某师副师长岳喜翠与八届全国人大代表女飞行员程晓健（谭先德摄于1988年）

140.空军功勋飞行员、某师副政委、七届全国人大代表刘晓莲与空军蓝天幼儿园的小演员在一起（谭先德摄）

141.第六批女飞行员（谭先德摄）

在第六批女飞行员中，有一位身材高挑的姑娘，叫刘宇环。她这样向别人介绍自己：“我爸妈都是飞行员，他们给我取名‘宇环’，就是要继承他们的飞行事业。我知道，当飞行员就意味着艰难困苦，意味着奉献青春，甚至意味着牺牲。我既然接过爸妈的驾驶杆，就打算接过这一切。”

无法考证这个世界上是否还有母女飞行员，但中国可以肯定只有她们母女俩—董锁箴、刘宇环。让我们从母女的通信中，听听她们关于翱翔蓝天的情话吧。

亲爱的妈妈：

今天，10月21日，此刻您一定在祝福女儿20岁的生日吧！但我要告诉您的是：今天，我驾驶银鹰首批单飞了！

清晨，当您还在甜梦中，我已坐进机舱，我深吸一口气，平静一下快跳出胸膛的心。“109（我的飞行代号）起飞”，口令终于从耳机里传来，我松开刹车，加大油门，飞机风驰电掣般冲出跑道，只觉机翼一振，身体一沉，飞机离陆了！此刻，一股浓浓的甜蜜和自豪顿涌心间。

妈妈，女儿在20岁生日这天，接过了您手中的驾驶杆。看到这里，您一定笑了。飞在云中，我感觉女儿的心与您贴得那么近，是那样深深地理解您。妈妈，您还记得那个怕妈妈去飞行、悄悄地藏起她的飞行包的小姑娘吗？她今天也飒爽英姿飞在蓝天了。妈妈，写到这，我禁不住落泪，这是幸福的泪……

宇环，我可爱的女儿：

看到你的信，妈妈真的笑了，和你一样也落下了幸福的眼泪，仿佛我又像当年那样翱翔蓝天。身为 50 年代我国第二批女飞行员的妈妈，绝没想到 35 年后，她唯一的女儿在 20 岁生日的时候，也会和她一样飞在蓝天。

可这时妈妈作为一个老飞行员要告诉你：千万不要沉迷在自豪里。你要牢记，女飞行员不是一朵供自己或别人欣赏的花，而是一名空中战斗员。国家花很多钱，才培养出一名飞行员，你一定要比妈妈飞得更好……

142. 第一批女飞行员秦桂芳（左四）向第五批女飞行员讲传统（谭先德摄于 1981 年）

143. 又一批女飞行员飞上了蓝天（谭先德摄）

144. 出舱（张连富摄）

中国古来就有“嫦娥飞天”的故事。那是受压迫的中国妇女寻求解脱的美丽传说。当今的中国，在蓝天持“彩练”的不仅有女飞行员，还有女伞兵。

1987 年 8 月 16 日，空降兵某新兵教导旅女战士首次成建制野战跳伞获得成功。上午 8 时 30 分，随着一颗绿色信号弹的升起，第一架运载女伞兵的飞机不住地颠簸。跳伞预备铃响了，只见姑娘们迅速起立，有条不紊地做着各种准备动作。随着一声“嘀——”的长铃，她们一个一个，沉着果敢地瞄准舱门，飞跃而出。这些女伞兵来自全国 8 个省市，在家时，有的是纺织女工、宾馆招待员、商占售货员；有的是刚走出校门的学生。她们每天早晨练 5 公里越野跑。炎炎仲夏，她们顶着烈日的高温练习离机和着陆。有个叫王琳的姑娘，入伍前晚上都不敢出门。现在从 800 米高空路下，第一次就达到了规定的要求。此后，她们在完成了 7 种不同科目的野战跳伞训练后，又奔赴野战部队，投入整体训练和野战生存训练。

145. 训练间隙的女伞兵（张连富摄）

146. 空中开花（张连富摄）

## 15 蓝色卫士——海军中的女兵

147. “南康号”医疗船升旗（王红摄）

148. 海上救护训练（王红摄）

149. 返航（王红摄）

1949 年 4 月 23 日，中国人民解放军海军宣告成立。在她的行列中，就有女兵的英姿。但真正的女水兵，却是在这个特殊兵种组建 42 年后——1991 年 3 月 14 日。南海舰队司令员、政委发布命令，任命陈金凤等 17 人为我军首批女水兵，随“南康号”医疗船参加锚训。这一天的黎明，17 名女水兵列

队甲板。站位、三防、灭火、堵漏……严厉的船长大声呼喝着将这群特殊的新水兵从军舰的前甲板赶到后甲板，从三等舱赶到手术室，6级阵风掀起层层涌浪，船身摇摆十多度，头错欲裂，吃晕船药也没用，一个人哇地一声吐了，接着又一个人，脸盆、水桶、船舱到处都是呕吐的痕迹。大海似乎在拒绝中国女兵。训练对她们来说是近乎残酷的，她们要和男兵一样摸爬滚打，完成各种名目繁多的专业和共同训练科目，船上没有水洗澡，饮水都要受到限制，为了减少麻烦，有的女兵光内衣就带了十几套，即使这样也解决不了问题。“陈霞，射击！”船长命令着。陈霞慌忙端起冲锋枪，目标却怎么也套不进瞄准器，她昏头打了两枪，把枪扔给身旁的一个男兵，抱着头蹲在一大堆缆绳旁，等待值班军官的训斥。没有人来训斥她。巨浪把船掀了起来，船长的人早已东倒西歪，又有许多男兵呕得流出了眼泪。海水打湿了陈霞的军装、短发，她呼地站了起来：装弹、瞄准、射击，目标终于被这个女战士击沉了。15天的锚训，女水兵们彻夜难眠一连几天吃不进一点东西，经受住了难于启齿的苦楚，面对尴尬，没有一个女兵哭泣过。15天后，人们吃惊地发现，甲板上那一排原本白皙的女水兵黑眼睛黑头发黑皮肤浑身上下只剩下牙齿是白色的了。

有幸进入海军的女兵，都是要与大海结缘的。1965年，一位安徽的姑娘，只身来到设在南京的解放军艺术学院考场，主考的艺术师被她质朴、隽永的歌声打动了。她被录取了。不久，她被派往海军南海舰队锻炼。她当电话兵，与身穿海魂衫的士兵们通话，她感受到那根电话线都是有海潮气息的。她当炊事员，每顿饭都夹着海水的咸涩。同时，她也被壮丽、深邃的蔚蓝色吸牙了。她成了海军政治部文工团的一名歌唱演员。她的歌《西沙，可爱的家乡》，温暖了几代舰艇士兵的心。靠大海的熏陶，她成了国家一级演员。她叫卞小贞。她不知道，当她在北海舰队演出时，那个地区有一位小姑娘，正悄悄地练声，默默地吟唱，小姑娘的梦，也是做一名歌唱家。1985年，小姑娘的个人演唱专辑《风说你要来》、《彩霞归来吧》分别由北国音像出版社、中国录音录像公司出版发行，引人注目的是歌曲的配器和监制也全部出自于她之后。她的姓名随着她的歌声已经被人们熟知。她就是范琳琳。1988年，这个从小倾听着大海的声韵成长的军人的女儿，像她的父辈一样，加入了海军。她与另一位加入海军的苗族女演员宋祖英一起，在飘浮的海上舞台——军舰上，在远离大陆的岛屿上，在战鹰停泊的机场上，掀起了一阵阵歌的浪潮。水手们欢呼不肯放过他们迷恋的“歌星”，以至于她们回到了北京，还能收到那来自大海和边防哨卡的问候。1991年和1994年，她们随海军舰艇编队出访泰国和俄罗斯，当她们像水兵一样在舷边甲板站坡，远航的疲劳顿时被从未有过的自豪感取而代之。她们把中国水兵的艺术形象和水兵们充满海洋气息的歌声留在了外国朋友、华侨和友军将士的心中。她们的姓名与全军几十名优秀女演员一起进入国家一级演员的行列，但随军舰远航的甜酸苦辣，却像专利似的印在她们独特的生命历程中。

150. 随舰艇编队出访俄罗斯在甲版站坡的女兵（左一为宋祖英，1994年5月）

151. 范琳琳随团在部队演出为战士签名（1994年）

## 16 女兵的骄傲——女将军

1955年中国军队实行军衔制。

在北京中南海怀仁堂的授衔仪式上，童养媳出身的女红军李贞，以她的赫赫战功晋升为中国第一个女将军。

1988年中国军队再次恢复军衔制。

聂力等5名女军官成为恢复军衔制后的第一批女将军。1993年，聂力晋升为中将，成为世界第一个女中将。至今，中国军队里的女将军已经有14名。这是一个举世瞩目的阵容，是中国女兵的骄傲。

李贞，1908年2月，生于湖南省小板桥乡。1926年春参加革命，1927年3月加入中国共产党。同年9月参加秋收起义。随后，任浏东游击队士兵委员长，浏阳县苏维埃执行委员会主席团主席。1930年冬任平江县委军事部长兼妇委书记。1931年冬任湘赣省妇委书记。1932年冬任湘赣军区区妇女团政委、湘赣军区红军学校政治主任。1934年11月任红六军团组织部长。1935年11月参加长征，任红二方面军组织部副部长、代部长。抗日战争和解放战争时期，她先后提任八路军妇女学校校长、120师直属政治处主任、陕甘宁晋绥联防军组织部组织科长、晋绥军区政治部秘书长、西北野战军政治部秘书长。抗美援朝战争中，任中国人民志愿军政治部秘书长。1953年回国后，先后任军委防空军政治部干部部部长，解放军军事检察院副检察长，总政治部组织部顾问等职。

152. 李贞将军（1955年）

153. 担任志愿军政治部秘书长的李贞（左二）和丈夫甘泗淇（左三）与志愿军司令员彭德怀（左五）兵团司令陈赓（左六）等在朝鲜前线合影（1951年）

154. 李贞与毛泽东（刘峰摄于1959年）

155. 聂力中将（江志顺摄于1994年）

国防科工委科技委原副主任兼秘书长、现国防科工委顾问聂力中将，1930年9月生，四川人。1950年3月加入中国共产党，1960年毕业于苏联列宁格勒清密机械与光学仪器学院，回国后一直在国防科研部门工作。国防科技很多重大的成果都与她的名字有关：如南太平洋测量同步通信卫星轨道参数的“远望号”远洋测量船、我国通用“银河”巨型计算机的研制及军用电子技术项目等。从80年代后半期起，她还兼任全国妇联副主席、第四届中国科学技术协会常委、电子学会高级会员、中国女科技工作者联谊会副会长。她是第八届全国人大常委、内务司法委员会委员、妇女儿童专门小组组长。1988年被授予少将军衔，1993年被授予中将军衔。

156. 廖文海少将（1988年）

解放军总医院院长廖文海少将，1934年5月出生于上海，1950年12月

在成都入伍，1956年毕业于沈阳医学院。28岁升任主治军医；36岁成为所在科副主任。1983年任解放军总医院副院长，1988年任院长。她管理的是一座全军最大的医院，有1500张位，4000多名工作人员，内含一所军医进修学院。医院的日门诊量达3000多人。她是中国共产党第十三届、十四届全国代表大会代表，中央候补委员。1988年被授予少将军衔。

#### 157. 胡斐佩少将（1988年）

解放军外国语学院原副院长胡斐佩少将，1930年出生，上海人，1949年入伍，1949年毕业于上海复旦大学，先后在军委劳大外文训练班、军委三部、总参三部干校、洛阳外国语学院任教，1983年任洛阳外国语学院训练部副部长，1987年任解放军外国语学院副院长。1993年她因完成“英语基础训练新突破”，获解放军三总部颁发的1993年军队院校优秀教学成果一等奖。1988年被授予少将军衔。

#### 158. 吴晓恒少将（1988年）

第一军医大学原副校长吴晓恒少将，1932年出生，湖北人，1950入伍，1956年毕业于哈尔滨医科大学，80年代初，她在任该校附属南方医院内科主任时，协助校长主持了第一座面向海外华侨的医院“惠侨楼”的医疗、后勤等工作的全面改革。1983年担任第一军医大学副校长，主管科研工作。她撰写的《正确运用科学技术是生产力的理论，促进院校的发展》等10余篇探讨和反映“科技兴校”的重要文章，先后在《中国高等教育》等杂志发表，1990年，学校获全军科技成果一等奖两项，实现了零的突破；获得二等奖的数目是她上任时的三倍多。1988年被授予少将军衔。

#### 159. 李希楷少将（1988年）

第三军医大学原副校长李希楷少将，1932年4月出生于北京，1950年9月入伍，1956年毕业于华中医学院，工作5年后升任主治军医，她的30多篇学术论文，及撰写的《心力衰竭进展》的学术专著，标示着她在心脏内科学领域的地位。1983年任第三军医大学附属二院院长，1986年任第三军医大学副校长。走上领导岗位后，她主持建立的医院感染质量控制实验室、初级医务人员毕业后继续医学教育、临床研究生质量控制等都是富有新意和创造的建树。是《中国妇女500杰》人物之一。1988年被授予少将军衔。

#### 160. 乔佩娟少将（于根泉摄于1995年）

解放军艺术学院原政委乔佩娟少将，1932年出生，1947年入伍，1953年毕业于中央戏剧学院歌剧系，1963年毕业于上海声乐研究所声乐专业，曾在《小二黑结婚》、《白毛女》等20多部歌剧中饰演主要角色，1979年任总政歌舞团副政委、政委，1988年任解放军艺术学院副院长，1992年任政委，主管艺术创作、学术研究和思想政治工作。她是中国音乐家协会会员、中国戏剧家协会会员、中国咽音学会常务理事。1990年被授予少将军衔。

161. 赵织雯少将（王安民摄于 1995 年）

解放军国际关系学院原副院长赵织雯少将，1935 年出生，浙江人，1951 年入伍，1956 年毕业于解放军外语学院，1981 年获美国旧金山大学硕士学位。她曾任教于西南军区训练班、解放军外国语学院、上海华东师范大学、解放军国际关系学院。她集 30 多年教学研究的丰富经验而编纂的《实用英语交际语法》再版 6 次仍供不应求；一本 100 万字的《现代英语交际指南》也将问世。1990 年被授予少将军衔。

162. 彭钢少将（江志顺摄于 1995 年）

总政治部纪律检查部部长彭钢少将，1938 年 11 月生，湖南人，1959 年 8 月入伍，1965 年 8 月毕业于西北军事电讯工程学院。1979 年任总参气象局研究所工程师，1980 年任总后司令部指挥管理自动化研究室工程师、研究室主任，1985 年任总后政治部干部产副部长、部长，1988 年任总后纪律检查委员会副书记，1990 年 7 月起任总政纪律检查委员会副书记，1990 年 7 月起任总后纪律检查部副部长、部长。她是中国共产党第十三届中央纪律检查委员会委员，第十四届中央纪律检查委员会常委，中央军委纪律检查委员会副书记，总政党委委员。1991 年被授予少将军衔。

163. 邓先群少将（江志顺摄于 1994 年）

总政治部群工部部长邓先群少将，1935 年 12 月生，四川人，1964 年加入中国共产党，大学文化，1957 年 10 月-1959 年在北京市西城区教育局工作，1959 年 8 月-1962 年在哈尔滨军事工程学院学习，毕业后，在国防部五院七所，海军“五·七”干校，六机部七院系统工程部，第二炮兵科技部、司令部、百科编辑室等部门工作，1991 年 2 月起，任总政治部群众工作部副部长，部长。1992 年被授予少将军衔。

164. 贺捷生少将（曾凡祥摄于 1995 年）

军事科学院军事百科研究部部长贺捷生少将，1935 年 11 月生，湖南人，1950 年入伍，历任助教、编辑、记者、总政编研究室主任等职，她领导的《中国军事百科全书》编审是中央军委 1984 年下达的重要任务，这部著作共 7 个知识门类，58 个学科，共收 11000 多个条目，释文约 1600 多万字，近 8000 幅图表，有 5000 多名军内外专家、学者参加编撰工作，是第一部代表我国、我军军事科学水平的典范性著作，她是军事科学学会的副秘书长，发表过数百万字的报告文学，电影剧本和小说，被中国作家协会和中国电影家协会吸收为会员。1992 年被授予少将军衔。

165. 王晓棠少将（江志顺摄于 1994 年）

八一电影制片厂厂长王晓棠少将，1934 年 1 月生，江苏人，1952 年入伍，

国家一级电影演员。1958年，她在《边寨烽火》中饰演女主角，获第十一届卡罗维·发行国际电影节青年演员奖。由于在多部影片中的出色表演，使她成为60年代初国家文化部批准的22位电影明星之一。她对艺术和语音学有独到的见解，香港《大公报》连载过她的语音专论，《电影艺术》刊登过她的艺术专论。1988年起担任八一电影制片厂副厂长、厂长。她是全国文联委员、中国电影家协会理事、中国国际文化交流中心理事，中国共产党第十四届代表大会代表，八届全国政协委员。1993年被授予少将军衔。

#### 166. 钟玉征少将（江志顺摄于1993年）

总参防化指挥工程学院基础部分析中心教授钟玉征少将，1930年出生，广东人，1950年入伍，她曾就读于南京国立中央大学医学系、南京金陵女子文理学院化学系、中国人民解放军化学兵学校、北京大学化学系，先后任教于北京大学化学系、化学兵学校、哈尔滨军事工程学院六系、防化指挥工程学院。是人民军队唯一的专业技术职称的女将军。1991年起，她曾三次率领中国化学专家参加联合国裁军委员会化学特设委员会组织的第二、三、四轮国际化学裁军核查对比实验。1993年被授予少将军衔。

#### 167. 晁福寰少将（赵进武摄于1995年）

军事医学科学院副院长晁福寰少将，1942年11月出生于天津，1965年毕业于天津医学院。70年代她在国内较早地开展了水中病毒的研究工作，负责并完成了F2噬菌体作为水中病毒消毒效果评价指标及其浓集检验方法等水中微生物方面的研究。80年代，她在任该院卫生学环境医学研究所所长期间，负责并完成了部队水质细菌检验箱的研究；部队饮水改善应用技术措施研究；部队食品微生物检验箱等研究，分别4次获军队科技进步奖和国家科技进步奖。共撰写论文32篇，著有《军队给水卫生学》。她是中国预防医学会理事和中国微生物学会理事。1994年被授予少将军衔。

### 17 祖国和平盾牌的铸造者——国防科研战线上的女兵

1988年，我国某卫星发射试验基地，人们发现，负责卫星软件程序编制的女工程师陈丽珊倒在桌子底下睡着了。又是连续一夜的攻关。桌子上，是一张张整齐的程序图。它包含的上万条指令是为我国第一颗气象卫星设计的。她的爱人心疼地说：“你这样干，还要不要命了？”陈丽珊揉着浮肿的眼睛，想对他笑一笑，却累得怎么也笑不出来。她不是将军，但由她编制的软件程序却成功地“统师”了“亚洲一号”，“长征2号捆绑式火箭”、“风云一号”等13次卫星与火箭的跟踪和测量，有她参加和组织编写的6部软件程序，4部获奖。而这些成就的创作地，是远离大城市的偏僻山区。

#### 168. 女工程师陈丽珊（孟令军摄）

这是一批有知识、有理想、有信念的女性。

1840年帝国主义用鸦片和洋枪敲开了中国的大门。百年近代中就是一部



中国人受欺辱和压迫的历史。站起来了的中国人民，要保卫自己的领土不受侵犯，一定要铸造反侵略的盾牌。为此，一批优秀的科学家集中到军事科学领域。在这支队伍里，有一群年轻的姑娘，如今她们已经成长为硕果累累的学科带头人。

169.高级工程师华鸣（宋庆海摄）

170.高级工程师林淑云

171.教授李晓梅（中）（谭克扬摄）

据不完全统计，1985年以来，中国军队中的女科技工作者获科研成果奖3000多项。全军获国家三等奖以上的322个项目中，有女科技工作者参加的就有183项，其中以她们为第一研究人员的25项，为主要研究人员的83项。

1964年10月，我国成功地爆炸了第一颗原子弹。此后，导弹、卫星等高科技装备发展起来了。这个过程既是我国知识分子对旧中国遗留的一穷二白的工业基础的挑战，也是他们自愿选择艰苦的山区，将自己的青春和知识，无私地奉献给祖国的漫长的生命历程。女研究员华鸣，积30多年从事现场核试验的理论与实践，较系统地总结了高空核爆炸的现象和规律，为核科学研究提供了丰富的资料和理论依据，填补了我国核爆炸效应在数据方面的空白。由她主持的系统电磁脉冲研究、卫星辐射环境研究，以及世界跟踪技术“高功率微波技术”等研究，获一等奖2项；二等奖2项；四等奖1项；五等奖6项。当中国的城市在大踏步地用霓虹灯、进口轿车和高速公路装饰它的容貌时，地处边远山区的科研基地仍然一如既往的保持着它的朴素和沉默。就在这个书稿即将付梓之际，那里的人们送来一纸信息：被命名为“闪光二号”的加速器，达到了国外同类产品的先进水平。它已经在应用等高新技术研究中发挥了重要的作用，并取得了明显的社会效益。这项成果的研制者是几十年从事脉冲功率技术和强流脉冲电子束加速器研究的女科学家邱爱慈。

中国的军事科学领域一片群星灿烂。那些标示着女性的星座，每一颗都闪烁着自己独特的光芒。

西安卫星测控中心技术部总工程师张淑凤，曾参加过20多次卫星和导弹发射测试任务，与她的资历相应的是20多个技术改造和革新项目，其中有6项科技成果获奖。我国第一位土家族女弹专家何慧婉，以她20多篇学术论文的成就，4次蝉联中国空间科学学会理事。第二炮兵某研究所总工程师王炬是我国50年代首批计算数学专业的毕业生。30多个春秋过去了，她先后取得了6项国家和军队的科技成果奖，成为我国战略导弹道诸元计算设计专家。被誉为给导弹装上大脑和眼睛的“天王神师”。

在当今世界，划定综合实力的指标已经不是炮舰兵戈，而和科技。而科技的实力是人才。到1992年，全军专业技术职务的占23.1%，高级专业技术职务的占2.3%。

今非昔比！在本世纪20年代的红军时期，中国女兵的主要成份还是童养媳呢。这是中国女兵整体的一个质量级的变化。它不仅标志关中国军队由体能军队向智能化的转变，而且橛着中国军队干部向知识化、职业化的迈进。

172. 高级工程师张淑凤

173. 研究员邱爱慈（杨建国摄）

174. 土家族导弹专家何慧婉（冯根锁摄）

175. 战略导弹“检查官”何彦芳

176. 高级工程师王炬（张建刚摄）

177. 帅门之女刘弥群（张其金摄）

80年代，当中美两国的国防部长开始磋商空间技术的往来时，中国还没有洁净度在万级以上的卫星测试厂房。领受这项任务的是一名女将，高级工程师林淑云。她深知这项工程是我国跨入国际航天市场的关键问题。她凭借自己多年的工作经验大胆创新，仅用了四个月的时间，就高质量地完成了全部设计任务。这是一座亚洲独一无二的工程：总建筑面积6200平方米，内含3个测试大厅，其中主要大厅长42米，宽18米，高18米，空调洁净度为10万级，送风量为每小时22万立方米。20多年来，林淑云共参加了10多项国防重点工程建设，主持完成了40多项工程设计任务，其中2项分别获得全国优秀工程银质奖、全国科技进步二等奖、全军优秀工程一等奖、科工委科技进步一等奖和科工委优秀工程一等奖。

1991年隆冬，一个漫天雪飘的深夜，长沙国防科技大学一名女教授摔倒在地，右手腕粉碎性骨折。第二天，人们看到她带着那只缠着绷带的手，又进了机房。她就是领衔研制开发“银河”气象应用软件系统李晓梅教授。摔伤的右手并没有妨碍她领导课题组的人员钻研具有国际先进水平的并行算法方案，他们以最短的时间实现了一套令人难以置信的技术方案，使“银河”作一天气象预报的运行时间缩短到413秒，大大低于合同规定的1100秒。她是我国从事巨型计算机并行算法理论与应用研究、巨型计算机应用软件系统的大师。她先后获得国家科技进步一等奖个人奖1项；军委特等科技成果奖个人二等奖、项；部委级一等奖2项，二等奖4项，三等奖6项；国家科技重大科研实验奖个人一等奖和光华基金一等奖各1次，出版专著3部150万字，培养硕士研究生14名。她还担任中国数学会计算数学分会并行算法专业委员会主任、中国软件行业协会数学软件协会副理事长、国际工业和应用数学协会会员。

人们把“会挽雕弓如满月，西北望，射天狼”的豪放诗句赠给帅门之女刘弥群，赞扬她为发展空军地空导弹事业做出的贡献。这不仅是因为她和同志们用7年的时间，经过17次试验和改进，研制成功了一种新型高能液体燃料，更多的是她在这种燃料的试验应用中所表现的不畏牺牲的果敢精神。一次试验中，有两发导弹头部折断，战斗部没有引爆，原因只有找到弹体才能下结论。这时，茫茫戈壁夜幕降临，谁也不能确定弹头的准确落点。雷管和战斗部在一起，随时都可能引爆。刘弥群坚持要自己去寻找。她冒着危险去了，找到了弹体，也得出了正确的结论。

178. 服装功能检测技术专家姜志华（李树森摄）

179. 军事装具研究专家刘锡梅（李树森摄）

有一军事科学家，他们是随着气候和变化工作的。最冷的时候，他们在最北面的部队；最热的季节，他们在最南面的部队。和年轻的战士们相比，科学家们的平均年龄是他们父辈的数字。东北某地，零下 40 的天气，一名战士急行军下来，向随行的科学家出示他的测试证明，棉衣口袋里的证件，都被汗水湿透了。位于亚热带气候区的南方某地，冲击出发陈地前的战士们，脸上、身上，被蚊虫叮满了包，一旁汗流浹背的科学家们被南方骄阳晒得黧黑的脸上和手上，也布满了蚊虫贪婪的痕迹。他们的目标是减轻战士们在行军和作战条件下的负荷。他们整日与战士们在一起摸、爬、滚、打，不仅如此，他们每天要比战士们早起，去食堂检测食品中的热量；还要比战士们晚睡，计算出当天工作的数据。三年的酷暑严寒过去了，1986 年《中国人民解放军单兵负荷量标准》诞生了。它科学地划定了军人行军、作战时的最佳负荷，是减轻单兵负荷量的理论依据。科学家们不仅要让战士们背得少，还要让战士们的装备负荷合理地分摊到身体的各个部位。又是三年过去了，他们研制出了《XZJ91 单兵携行具》，为结束官兵行军“绳带捆绑”奠定了基础。这些科研项目的第一完成人和负责人是女科学家、高级工程师刘锡梅。与她同在军需装备研究所工作的还有一们杰出的女士，叫姜志华，是服装功能方面的专家。她在“热熔粘结絮片生产工艺和热熔粘结机”项目中，独立承担了全部电器控制系统的设计、制图和安装。她们在获得军队和国家科技进步一等奖的同时，也使千家万户的中国人第一次穿上了非棉花的保暖絮片制作的御寒服。当姜志与她的同伴们在祖国大北方的科季通过人体实测单兵服装保暖功效的时候，一个更大胆的方案已在他们的头脑中行动--用计算机控制模拟测试的方案。由她负责硬设备控制系统的研究设计，“78-1 暖体假人”实验成功，第二代产品“87 变温暖体假人”，又成功地解决了整个系统在实现数据采集速度快、控制精度高、系统稳定性好等方面的技术关键问题。这是一套人体与环境之间热交换过程的自控模拟实验设备。可模拟真人群体着装在低温环境下静态和动态的保暖性能，为各类服装特别是冬服提供了功能全面的研究测试手段。它不仅为中国军队 87 系统科服和研究测试手段。它不仅为中国军队 87 系列冬服和民用防护服装的研究、装备和生产提供了一系列数据和依据，也为中国南极考察服、海军潜艇员脱险服和美国军队北极服提供了评价鉴定结果，并在整套系统研究成果的基础上，制定了《劳动防护服防寒保暖要求国家标准》。

与海军航标灯和舰艇防腐涂料联系在一起的也是一们女性的名字。她叫萨本茂，是海军 4805 工厂的高级工程师。30 多年来，好先后完成了 63 项科研项目，写了 67 篇科研论文和实验总结报告，其中两项填补了国家空白，有三项获 1978 年全国科学大会重大科研成果奖。她研制的航标灯乙炔清洗剂，经过上千次的试验，使用寿命是国外同类产品的 36 倍；电刷镀钢液在舰艇机修使用上，一年可为国家节约上百万人民币。如今，她已是年过花甲的老人了，她记得，第一次领受乙炔清洗剂研制任务时，她才 28 岁。

## 180. 高级工程师萨本茂

军事科学院在建院初期只有不到 10 名女性，她们主要从事翻译和资料整理工作。现在，女研究人员几乎遍布学院战略研究、战役研究、军制研究、军事历史研究、军事百科研究、军事运筹分析研究等各主要学科，占科研人员总数的 9.2%。从事军事战略研究的徐晓军，发表著、译作 200 余万字，多次获全军优秀论文一、二等奖，获全军军事科研成果三等奖。论文编入《苏美军战役理论的新发展》、《战术发展新控》、《孙子探胜》、《21 世纪的亚洲：战略调整》等书，参加了《毛泽东军事战略论》和《高技术战争论》等专著的撰写和《孙子兵法》法文版的翻译。外国军事研究员刘小英是硕士研究生导师。参加译校的主要军事专著有《第二次世界大战的决定性战役》、《现代战争指南》、《军事战略》、《统帅们》等书籍和资料 200 多万字；参加编写的军事专著有：《外国军事质量建设概览》《外国快速反应部队研究》和《外国预备役部队概览》等，学术成口曾多次获全国和军事科学院科研成果奖。

## 182. 军事科学院研究员徐晓军（姜文明摄）

我军女科学家人数最多、成果最集中的当数军事医学领域。军事医学科学院基础医学研究所研究员沈培奋以《抗人 T 淋巴细胞单克隆抗体制作》和《单克隆抗体用于淋巴细胞白血病疫分型的研究》获两项军队科技进步一等奖；另有 4 项成果获军队科技成果二等奖和三等奖。成为女科学家中获奖级别最高和最多的佼佼者之一。

## 181. 军事科学院战略研究员刘小英（姜文明摄）

## 183. 研究员黄翠芬（赵进武摄）

## 184. 全国人大代表海军政治学院院长徐莉莉（龙运河摄）

有一位女科学家，叫黄翠芬，1950 年与丈夫冒险搭乘一艘货轮，在海上漂泊 50 多天，历尽艰辛离开美国回国。她与丈夫一组建了微生物教研室和药理教研室，将编写的《细菌学》、《药理学》的稿费捐献给国家的抗美援朝。50 年代，她研制的战伤四联类毒素、气性环疽类毒素和其它一些成果，填补了国内空白。十年动乱中，她不顾个人和家庭遭受的委屈和磨难，主持了国防重点科研项目，主要指标达到国际先进水平，获得全国科学大会重大成果奖。80 年代初，为了尽快掌握遗传工程学方面的技术，她以自费探亲的名义去美国华盛顿进行访问研究，人们看到，这位年老的教授，每天比别人提前近一个小时到达实验室。午饭，是自己带的--两片面包和一个苹果，而她每天在实验台前一站就是 10 个小时。6 个月过去了，她参与完成了两项科研项目，发表了两篇论文。她将美国同行赠送的价值一万美元的实验仪器和试剂全部带回祖国交给了她所在单位。回国后，她在遗传工程研究方面创立了 20 多项新技术和新方法，为研制相应的疫苗或生物制品创造了条件。1984 年，中央军委授予她“模范科学工作者”称号。

## 185. 声乐硕士彭丽媛

我们把总政歌唱家、国家一级演员彭丽媛列入这个学者如林的行更，有感于也是中国第一位民族声乐唱法硕士学位的获得者。她决定再次进入大学深造时，不是主演过歌剧《白毛女》的著名女演员，而且在 1985 年全国聂耳、冼星海声乐作品演唱比赛中获金奖，在 1986 年第二届全国青年歌手电视大赛中获金奖，在 1986 年第二届全国青年歌手电视大奖赛中获专业民族唱法第一名。当她认真地把中国传统的唱法作科学的研究时，人们再一次领略了她的视野和才华。1989 年，她荣获建国 40 周年“金唱片”奖和“广播金曲”奖，1990 年获第二届全国影视十佳歌手的称号，1994 年获《'94 共城杯中国音乐电视（MTV）大赛》金奖、演唱金奖。1990 年以来，她先后在北京、上海、广州和新加坡成功地举办了独唱音乐会演唱会，成为中国最成功的歌唱家之一。

## 186. 国防科技大学计算机科学与工程系 24 岁的女博士罗莉（谭克扬摄）

女科学家们不仅是科技成果的研制者，而且是勇于开发科研成果的实干家。1992 年 5 月，担任军事医学院毒物药物研究所所长肖文彬又挑起了北京四环制药厂厂长的重任。而对医药市场几千家中外制药企业的激烈竞争，他们确立了厂所一体、互为依托的开发体制。创立了统一目标的一所两制；统一领导的分工运作；统一配置的人员使用；统一协调的利益分配等科企互补的“四环模式”。建厂一年就创下了人均销售收入 82 万元，利税总额 2741 万元，上交国家税款 800 万元的奇迹。当年各项综合指标名列北京市新技术产业开发试验区 20 强企业第七位。

战斗在军事科研领域中的女科学家，她们的奉献和牺牲是双倍的。在过去一个相当长的时间里，国家的安全利益需要从事军事科学的专家们长久地隐性埋名，她们的成果与她们一起成为鲜为人知和“秘密”。1986 年，“战时特种武器伤害的医学防护”光荣地出现在国家科学技术进步特等奖和行列中。这是军事医学科学院的科研人员奋斗了 27 年的结晶，内含 124 项成果。其中参加解病毒的试服试用，先含 124 项成果。其中参加解病毒的试服试用，先后就有 3000 多人次。1986 年当我在这个昔日“神秘”的院墙里采访时，女科技工作者徐勤惠告诉我，在她的两条大腿上，至今留有两大块疤痕，这是为试验一种药膏留给她的纪念。当时她风大学毕业，是个 22 岁的姑娘。她还清楚地记得，涂药后皮肤起了铜板大的水泡，疼得她几个晚上都睡不着觉。她们还开玩笑说：“等我们将来有了孙子的时候，他问这个疤是怎么回事，我们就告诉他，这是你爷爷、奶奶当年留下的光荣疤。”防毒新药和器械就这样在他们手中诞生了。又一个 10 年快过去了，徐勤惠是否有了孙子我尚不得知，但我知道那种用科学家的生命和身体无偿奉献的年代已经一去不复返了。我还知道当年的徐勤惠们还有很多，在商品大潮奔涌的今天，她们一如既往地耕耘着国防科研的土地，精心铸造着祖国的平盾牌。

## 18 走向世界的中国女兵

1919年圣诞节,19岁的蔡畅乘坐法国邮轮从上海起程历经印度洋、苏伊士运河,进入地中海,在马赛登陆,结束了35天的海上旅行,开始了她的留学生涯。人们不曾想到,这位普通的“湘妹子”后来会成为中国女界的头面人物,闯入国际殿堂。蔡畅本人是否有过这样的梦想,我们尚不清楚。28年后,1947年2月,当蔡畅由东北前往捷克斯洛伐克首都布拉格,出席国际民主妇女联合会布拉格理事会时,却标志着一个历史时期的开始:这是中国解放区妇女联合会筹委会第一次出现在国际舞台上。

187. 研究所所长、厂长肖文彬(范国庆摄)

188. 1948年张琴秋作为中国妇女代表团成员出席国际妇女联合会第二次代表大会,在匈牙利首都布达佩斯。

国际民主妇女联合会创建于1945年12月1日,是由苏、法、英、美41个国家的妇女代表在法国巴黎倡导成立的。它的宗旨是团结国际妇女,为肃清法西斯主义以及为世界和下民主而奋斗。理事会提出,中国解放区妇女联合会可推派正式理事两名,侯补理事一名。1946年4月,各解放区团体选出蔡畅、邓颖超为正式理事,丁玲为侯补理事。5月,国际民主妇女联合会电邀邓颖超参加6月27日在巴黎召开的理事会,被国民党政府刁难阻挠而未能出席。蔡畅在1947年的大会上,作了题为《为争取独立、民主、和平而奋斗的中国妇女》的报告。国际民主妇联决定,把蔡畅的报告全文寄送美国各妇女团体并致函罗斯福夫人及美国妇女团体,要求她们支持中国妇女争取和平与民主的运动。1948年12月1日至6日,国际民主妇联第二次代表大会在匈牙利首都布达佩斯召开。以蔡畅为首的中国妇女代表团携带关于解放区妇女生活和斗争的照片、图表、生产品出席大会,代表团成员有:张琴秋、区梦觉、李文宜、丁玲、李兰丁等12人。蔡畅作了《关于亚

189. 李淑兰(朝荣志摄于1967年)

洲各国妇女民主运动发展》的报告。国际民主妇联主席戈登夫人的报告中不止一次地赞扬中国革命和中国妇女,她说:“中国的蔡畅女士是一位中国解放区妇女运动的组织者和战斗者,一位伟大的女英雄。她代表着新中国,新中国的逐日进步对我们是很大的鼓舞。”这次大会选举了蔡畅为副主席,蔡畅、邓颖超、何香凝、李德全为正式理事,许广平、陆瑾、丁玲为侯补理事,蔡畅、邓颖超、何香凝为正式执委,李德全、陆瑾为侯补执委。大会作出决定:1949年将在解放了中国召开亚洲妇女会议。

1949年,大会如期在中国召开了,蔡畅和其他代表第一次以执政者的身份,做了会议的东道主。她再次为中国妇女揭开了历史性的一页。中国以她的崭新姿态迈向世界。当中国女兵再次出现在国际舞台时,也已经是一种非政治的面孔了。

这是一座灯光璀璨的舞台,它的水银灯吝啬地照在那些只属于民办级的“选手”身上,即使这样,在中国女兵站立的那个方陈中,我们的目光仍旧

目不暇接。

站在这个方陈前列的是女兵队列中的年轻运动员和艺术家。她们以和平的使者出访世界，在与各国选手和平等的竞争中，为祖国和中国女兵夺得了一枚枚耀眼的金牌。

1963年，李淑兰打破了世界女子射箭的记录，至1966年，她先后17次打破8项女子射箭世界记录。

#### 190. 李亚敏、董湘毅、杜宁生（江志顺摄于1975年）

1975年，李亚敏、董湘毅、杜宁生在第三届全国运动会射击比赛中，分别以591环、587环和588环的成绩打破女子小口径手枪射击世界记录，至1978年，她们在国内、国际的射击比赛中，先后四次打破这个项目的世界记录。

1979年，马燕红获得20届世界体操锦标赛女子高低杠冠军；1984年又获得23届奥运会女子高低杠冠军。

1979年，高庆在全军第四届体育运动会上，女子小口径标准手枪60发慢加速射击比赛中，以593环的成绩破世界记录。

1981年，童玲获得36届世界乒乓球锦标赛女子单打冠军。

1983年，沈剑平、戴丽丽获得37届世界乒乓球锦标赛女子双打冠军。

#### 191. 马燕红（王华摄于1984年5月）

1985年，戴丽丽又与上海选手耿丽娟获得38届世界乒乓球锦标赛女子双打冠军。

1991年，雷丽获得五届世界女子举重锦标赛67.5KG级抓举、挺举总成绩冠军。

作为中国国家队主力队员的军队女运动员曹慧英、陈招娣、杨希、杨锡兰和李延军与国家女子排球队员一起，先后在1981年第3届世界杯女子排球赛，1982年第9届世界女子排球锦标赛，1984年第23届奥运会女子排球赛，1985年第4届世界杯女子排球赛和1986年第10届世界女子锦标赛中，蝉联5届冠军。

1992年10月，在瑞士举行的国际军体理事会第二届女子军事五项锦标赛中，中国军事体育代表团获女子团体冠军。邵文芳在第二届国际军事体育比赛中，获军事五项个人冠军。

1993年，李对红在世界杯射击比赛中，获女子运动手枪冠军。

1994年，陆芳、王恋英在国际军事体育比赛中，分别获手枪个人冠军和军事五项个人冠军。

同年，在第七届世界游泳锦标赛中，贺慈红分别以1 0 57, 2 7 40, 和4 1 67的成绩取得女子100米仰泳、200米仰泳和4×100米混合接力冠军。周官彬、乐莹以7 57 96的成绩取得4×200米自接冠军。单莺、乐莹以3 37 91的成绩取得4×100米自接冠军。

#### 192. 童玲

193. 戴丽丽

194. 中国女排在比赛中，图为杨锡兰

195. 雷丽

196. 1992年10月，中国军事体育代表团在国际军体理事会第二届女子军事五项锦标赛中，获女子团体冠军。中间左起：田凤、王恋英、邵文芳。

197. 贺慈红

198. 被中央军委授予“体坛尖兵”称号的叶乔波（江志顺摄于1993年）

军队的女艺术家闪是阳早代表国家出访的和平使者。1960年，总政歌舞团高音歌唱家徐有光随贺龙元帅出访朝鲜，她在朝鲜人民军前线陈地演出朝鲜民歌《阿里郎》等，驻守陈地的部队把他们最高的荣誉献给了这位中国歌手--授予她“模范战士”的称号，并用她的姓名命名了一个建制班，每天点名时，由一名最出色的战士负责答“到”。她演唱的俄罗斯民歌、墨西哥民歌也随着她的足迹留在了欧洲数国人民的心里。

199. 舞蹈艺术家左哈拉

左哈拉·沙赫玛依娃是建国后军队培养的第一代少数民族舞蹈家。她表演的舞蹈不仅优美、洒脱，有强烈的艺术感染力，还以自编自演而著称。50年代，她与苏盛兰等总政歌舞团演员，多次代表军队和国家文化艺术界访问过欧、亚、非等20多个国家，被授予过埃塞俄比亚国王金奖、波兰政府金十字勋章、罗马尼亚政府金星勋章、捷克斯洛伐克伏契克奖章。1956年，她表演的《纱巾舞》和《盘子舞》在第六届世界青年联欢节双双获银质奖。

200. 女高音歌唱家徐有光

1990年1月，在法国巴黎举行了第十三届“明日”和第四届“未来”两个世界杂技大赛，在参赛的19个国家、56个节目中紧张角逐。一举夺得“未来”世界杂技大赛金奖首奖--法兰西共和国总统奖的是中国年仅9岁的演员小米粒。她表演的获奖节目是《柔术转毯》。她还因此获得苏联“列宁基金委员会”颁发的最年轻演员奖。她是广州军区战士杂技团的小演员。同年4月，广州军区政治部给她记了一等功，她成为全军年龄最小的一等功臣。李鹏总理亲切地唤她为“国宝”。1993年捧回蒙特卡洛国际马戏节最高奖--金小丑奖的是小米粒的同们陈小洁和朱微丽。这是反映当代世界杂技和马戏最高水平的比赛。这一年她俩者是12岁。她们表演的获奖节目《双顶碗》的编导和教练，是她们所在的广州军区战士杂技团45岁的女艺术家高文秀。高文秀出身于杂技世家，她5岁习艺，6岁便随家人登台表演《顶碗》，11岁时，她带艺进广州军区战士杂技团主演《顶碗》节目，后不慎致伤改作教练。她把自己的艺术之梦转移到培养新一代艺术家的身上。高文秀集多年艺术实践



创编的《双顶碗》，融艺术、技巧、观赏、审美于一体，使节目在传统的基础上得到了升华。1993年，当大会组委会宣布最高奖的得主时，高文秀流泪了。

1991年，南京军区前线歌舞团青年演员朱虹在亚洲音乐节新人歌手演唱大赛中获演唱大奖，1994年她又在罗马尼亚“金鹿杯”国际通俗歌曲比赛中获第五名。

201. 小米粒表演的《柔术转毯》（1990年）

202. 杂技《双顶碗》（1993年）

1994年，“亚洲之声”国际通俗歌手大奖赛在阿拉木图举行，总政歌舞团青年演员白雪和空军政治部文工团青年演员范春梅获得比赛和一等奖。

203. 在周恩来研讨会上，邓颖超对铁竹伟说：“你不但要写恩来的优点，也要写他的缺点。”（1988年）

在国际图书市场，中国军队女作家的作品，也出现在它的书架上。南京军区文艺创作室女作家铁竹伟以撰写大型传记文学而闻名。她以独特的视角和鲜为人知的材料，发表了《霜重色愈浓》、《红军浪漫曲》、《廖承志传》，与人合作完成了《一个人和一个城市》、《陈毅传》、《农民企业家》等6部长篇传记文学。她撰写解词的大型记录片《周恩来》，在国内外发行了700多拷贝。由邓小平题写书《廖承志传》将翻译成英、日文在国内外发行。她的战友于劲，1988年10月推出了长篇纪实文学《厄运》，真实地描写了中国人民志愿军战俘在朝鲜战争中的悲壮历史，1990年在香港出版。她的另一部长篇纪实文学《上海--1949：大崩溃》展现了本世纪40年代后半期中国政治、经济、军事的历史变迁，和国共两党消长兴衰的演变过程。1995年，该书也摆上了香港的书架。

204. 于劲在对越自卫作战前线采访（1985年）

与小米粒、陈小洁们相比。62岁的军事医学科学院研究员邓蓉仙是她们的祖母年龄了。而1989年，邓蓉仙就是以这样的高龄登上世界卫生组织疟疾化疗工作的讲坛，报告由她设计和领导研制成功的抗疟新药-本芴醇的各种数据和性能：对恶性疟的治愈率在95%以上，生产方便、价格低廉、三废少、毒性小。在场的专家们都震惊了，也信服了。据世界卫生组织统计，疟疾年发病率人数高达2亿左右，其中危及生命的恶性疟约占80%，寻找抗疟新药，成为世界医学和公共卫生亟待解决的重大课题。这个难题被中国的科学家们攻克了。邓蓉仙和她的战友们以抗疟新药-本芴醇，荣获军队科技成果一等奖和国家发明一等奖。人们只知道她捧走了药学皇冠上的一颗璀璨的明珠，却很少知道摘取明珠的过程是一场与她搏斗近20多年、失败无法计数的人生较量。在这个寂寞枯燥的过程中，跟着她的年轻姑娘头上长了白发；她也从年富力强的“台柱子”熬成了白发苍苍、体弱多病的老太太。

在科学的崎岖小路上，成功的鲜花并不因为对手是女性而提前绽放。在

这场人类智慧的角逐中，更多的人只有付出而闻不到花香。

广州军区总医院理疗科军医龙层花和她的丈夫骨科主任魏征，从 1959 年起潜心研究颈椎病，直到他们退休后，才从美国捧回了“世界传统医学论文大奖赛‘生命力’杯金杯奖”。

205. 龙层花（白新摄）

206. 研究员邓蓉仙

进入 20 世纪后半期，世界军事的角逐也随着高科技的发展而越来越智能化，在这个没有硝烟的战场上，也有黄皮肤、黑眼睛、长头发的中国女性。

1991 年 3 月，瑞士，日内瓦。在什皮兹 NC—化学实验室大厅里，人们在等待着国际化学裁军第二轮对比试验的评定裁决结果。当代号 6 的中国实验室以名列前茅的成绩亮相后，所有的人都将敬佩的目光投向一位表情矜持的中国女科学家。她是总参防化指挥工程学院的分析化学教授钟玉征。当钟玉征站在大会主席台上用准确、流利的英语宣读学术论文明，她的魅力与才智，再次使与会者震惊。这是联合国裁军委员会化学特设委员会组织的实验。中国的第一次参加。这种实验的难度非同一般，从样启封到报告结果，只有一个月时间。一场没有枪炮的战斗开始了。钟玉征和她率领的课题组操作着并不先进的仪器、甚至使用很原始的方法，破解着高科技的难题。他们没有了昼夜，有的只是不停地工作。一份 206 页的英文实验报告在钟玉征的打字机上出来了，国际裁军委员会如期收到了中国的报告。之后，在联合国化学裁军特设委员会下发的综合技术报告中，收进的三个典型处理样品方法都是中国的，所有的图谱中国的占了 22%。会议还要求各国在以后的实验中，要以中国的做法为样板，并将中国的报告印成专页推荐给另外 15 个参试国。钟玉征首战千捷。此后，她又率中国化学专家组参加了第三、四轮国际裁军核查对比实验，取得了同样出色的战绩。

207. 钟玉征在瑞士日内瓦国际会议大厦前（1991 年）

中国女军事科学家开始令世界刮目相看。这不仅是中国女兵的骄傲，也是中国妇女整体的飞跃。

208. 总参谋部长话女战士（杨子桓摄于 1994 年）

Twentieth-Century Chinese Servicewomen  
Dedicated to the World Conference on Women in 1995

TWENTIETH—CENTURY  
CHINESE SERVICEWOMEN  
二十世纪中国女兵

## I. Oppression of Ages and Leap in Centuries:

### Servicewomen in the Great Revolution and the Red Army(1927—1937)

#### 1.Reverberations of a Capital "W" in China

Feb. 12,1927 was a date that must be capitalized in the military histories both of the Communist Party and the Kuomintang. Over the large lawn of the Lianghu Academy of Classical Learning in Wuchang, there was an exceedingly solemn and respectful atmosphere. The Huangpu Military Academy was holding a school opening ceremony for the sixth batch of its cadets. What was different from previous ceremonies was that a formation of servicewomen in uniforms was to go through the review together with more than 4,000 servicemen. More than 300VIPs, including Song Qingling, Xu Qian, Sun Ke, Peng Zemin, Wu Yuzhang and other persons in charge from the Central Party Headquarters and the National Government of the Kuomintang, and Dong Biwu and Zhan Dabai, representatives from the Party Headquarters of Hubei Province and Wuhan City of the Kuomintang, attended the ceremony as honored guests.

The whole audience seethed with excitement when the honored guests on the rostrum solemnly saluted with eyes the formation of servicewomen wearing the red signs of "W" on both of their sleeves. This was a pioneering undertaking since the dawn of history and a sharp sword thrust into the feudal camp by the revolutionary army. This batch of servicewomen, consisting of 130 people, was the first one in the contemporary history of China. "W" is the abbreviation for "woman" in English. The use of it as a mark of the servicewomen's uniforms, despite a flavor of imported culture, was in itself symbolic of a new wave of opening to the outside world.

Yet the emergence of this "W" gave rise to a shaking no less strong than a hurricane in society and the servicewomen's families.

That a young woman, carrying a baby in her arms, signed up for the entrance examination for the Central Military Academy caused a sensation in Wuhan. She was Wang Yixia. At the moment she had no time to give consideration to the kind of "figure" she had become or the disgusting satires, abuses and ridicules in the newspapers. She must find a place for her child as soon as possible, for it was after all impossible to attend a military academy with a baby. Learning that the Catholic church took in children, she went there with her child. The Catholic father said: "We may take in the child, but he will belong to God rather than to you in the future." The young mother was astonished: "It's incredible that a mother should join the revolutionary ranks with her child given to God!" She entrusted her

baby to the care of a rickshaw man and went to register at the military academy.

Huang Jie, her classmate, also found herself in an unexpectedly awkward predicament. She had her hair cut in a style then called "army hair" and sent back home a picture of herself as a servicewoman. She meant to get the support from her family members and yet was cursed by her uncle as "the scum of the family" and as being offensive against decency. Her brother-in-law on the paternal side, owner of a private bank, specially had a message sent to her that she was not to walk through the street in front of her own family's house.

There was another woman cadet who sent home a "letter of safety". Her relatives and friends were anxious to know the destination of this woman who had left home to attend the college entrance examination. Unfortunately her mother fainted on the floor before the letter was finished. Being a servicewoman meant being a bandit, a whore to the old woman who kept murmuring: "Who will marry such a girl?"

The servicewomen initiated a "war" without any experience of war yet. The shock waves of this "war" threatened to destroy them and their families.

With a deposit of more than 2'000 years, the Chinese feudal society had long before set a fixed position for its females. Women from rich and influential families had only two addresses: "Miss" before marriage and "Mistress" after marriage. Women from lowly families were termed respectively "maid", "wet nurse," and "whore, " etc. But "servicewoman" was excluded from its standard dictionary. The only woman practitioner of martial arts recorded in Chinese history was an imperial concubine of Emperor Shang, by the name of Fu Hao. Though she excelled in martial arts, her skill constituted no more than mere amusement for the emperor. As to Mu Guiying, Fan Lihua and Hua Mulan, characters from literary and artistic works, they might lead forces in expeditions and behave remarkably in battles, and yet they were simply material for entertainment, to be sung about in tearooms or on theatrical stages among the folks. They were not at all mentioned in history books written in biographical style or in classical works. During the period of the Taiping Heavenly Kingdom, Hong Xiuquan once led a force of about 100'00 servicewomen, who together with their head, the valiant and forthright Hong Tianjiao, were merely a synonym for "bandits" and "female thieves" in public dictionaries. Historians can ascertain their establishment and estimate their forces only through Collection of the Thieving Situations, compiled by the Qing Government at that time. This massive army of servicewomen, encircled and suppressed by the formidable feudal forces of the nineteenth-century China, eventually disappeared.

Today servicewomen and career women in cities are a common sight,

but at the early stage of this century, the paradigms for Chinese women were "delicately formed hands," "three-inch golden lotuses"—women's bound feet, and "smiling without showing the teeth." Most females locked themselves within their chambers, never venturing outside. Their marriages were wholly at the mercy of their parents, for they must stick to the matches arranged by go-betweens according to their parents' wishes. Among the Chinese people there was an old and popular saying which goes like this: Good men never join the army just as good iron is never used to forge nails, Imagine the response at that time to the idea of women joining the army, women who had been suppressed for about 2'000years under the patriarchal system and all its concepts, like the authority of the father, the husband, the clan, and religion.

It seemed as if the patriarchal society purposely desired to teach the servicewomen a lesson. For soon a piece of greater news hit the streets of Wuhan City: 100 women went on demonstration naked, advertising themselves as women cadets of the military academy. While girls and young wives along the streets all covered their eyes with their hands, hooligans and sinister gangs, whistling and spitting, shouted: "What kind of cadets are they? They are whores from the brothel! They are prostitutes!" In the end, however, the true identity of these women was discovered. They were prostitutes all right, but they had been employed to pose as cadets by rightwingers who put on this farce in order to cause confusion and humiliate this first group of new women brave enough to challenge the feudal society.

Thus the Chinese servicewomen came into being under these circumstances. They put off the dresses of young ladies, wiped away the powder and rouge on their faces, and put on grey-cloth uniforms, black-cloth stockings, grey-cloth puttees, leather belts of more than one cun in width, and grey-cloth army caps that concealed their golden hair. Most of these servicewomen were students from provinces of Hunan, Sichuan and Henan, and many of them had quietly signed up for the military academy without their families' knowledge.

Having never before received any training, this army did not march in step yet, and the servicewomen still had tears left over from yesterday on their somewhat childish faces. Yet they felt mature as if all of a sudden, for they were no longer ordinary young girls or young wives. They were now servicewomen. The youngest of them all was Zeng Xiping, who had secretly signed up for the military academy against the will of her family that had sent her to study at the Sangchan School in Changsha. To these women, their decision meant not only the casting off once for all of traditional female life patterns but also a severe test of their future destinies. There was no paradigm to seek after at that time for the future of servicewomen, whereas examples of women being punished for transcending the restrictions and fetters

of the feudal system could be found everywhere.

Just a few days before, some of them had gone through a mental struggle with regard to the cutting of braids. Among the female candidates from Sichuan twenty-eight were admitted to the military academy. They had to make some preparations now that they were about to join the army. "Our dresses must be changed! Thousands of servicemen are all wearing uniforms. How can we servicewomen be allowed wear cheonsams?" said Tong Youzhi, throwing back her short hair. Seeing this act, You Xi said: "I'm afraid that we should all have our braids cut off." Jiang Shenchu said: "Talking about cutting braids, there had been a big unrest in Sichuan about this. A county head even placed a ban on it. Now that we can freely cut our braids, some are reluctant..." Saying this, she took a look at Chen Deyun, who lowered her head and coiled up her braids around one of her hands. Long hair had been the mark of women since ancient times. Numerous men of letters had eulogized it. In Chen Deyun's case, ever since she could remember things, all the praise she received from her neighbors had started from this head of beautiful hair. She could not in the least imagine how she would look without her braids. While Chen Deyun was still hesitating, Duan Huiyun, taking out a pair of scissors, said: "I'll be the first. Who will cut my braids for me?" In a moment, one braid after another was cut off and Chen Deyun's braids were eventually cut off, too. Her eyes were red, and even though she forced herself not to cry, she still shed some tears of reluctance.

The appearance of the servicewomen on the stage of Chinese history was not unprepared. The outlook of female emancipation, advocated by Mr. Sun Yat-sen, pioneer of the Chinese democratic revolution and president of the Republic of China, was deeply rooted in the guiding principles of the democratic revolution he put forward and the democratic revolution he directed. The running of girls' schools, the advocacy of women participating in government and political affairs, the opposition to arranged marriages and the binding of feet, these had all become fashions in cities and towns. Mr. Sun himself had recommended for membership in the Chinese Revolutionary League he led Madame He Xiangning and Madame Qiu Jin, who became staunch revolutionaries and outstanding leaders of the women's movement. Madame Song Qingling, the president's wife, was even more a vanguard fighter in implementing the revolutionary guiding principles put forward by Mr. Sun. In 1936, immediately after she followed the Northern Expeditionary Army to Wuhan, then the revolutionary center, she, together with 14 communists and leftist leaders of the Kuomintang, formed the Central Executive Committee of the Chinese Kuomintang and the Interim Joint Conference of the committee members of the National Government as the interim supreme power organization of the Party and



the Government before the capital was moved. At the same time, she took the lead in forming with Deng Yanda and 12 other people the Wuhan Branch of the Central Political Conference of the Kuomintang and served as a member. At No.5, Siwei Road, Hankou, she set up the first training class in politics for the revolutionary women and she herself took up the post of director, training women cadres and arousing women to participate in the national revolution. This training class, forming actually the reserve force for the national revolutionary army of women, was aimed at uniting women of the whole country and even the whole world to form a massive revolutionary alliance. In addition, together with He Xiangning, she organized the Red Cross Society, launched a movement of expressing sympathy and solicitude for the wounded, plotted wartime relief work, and asked personally by telegram the National Council of the Soviet Trade Union to mobilize all the trade union organizations in providing relief to the wounded soldiers in Wuhan.

The spring tide of the revolution also prepared excellent cadres for the birth of the armed forces of women. Cai Chang, who, together with Xiang Jingyu, had formed in 1918 the Work-Study Society of Hunan Women Studying in France, was now back home after studying in Paris, France and Moscow, the USSR. Having led the women's movement in Guangdong with He Xiangning, Cai Chang, just relieved of the post of secretary of the Women's Federation of the District Committee of Guangdong and Guangxi of the Chinese Communist Party (CPC), now assumed the office of the French interpreter and concurrently the section chief of propaganda of the Political Department of the National Revolutionary Army. Deng Yingchao, who had taken part in the May Fourth Movement and organized the women's and students' federations and the League of Women's Rights Movement in Tianjin, had now finished her school days and was transferred to the post of head of the Women's Section of the District Committee of Tianjin of the CPC and a member of the District Committee of Guangdong and Guangxi as well as head of the Women's Section of the Committee.

The military academy, located on the site of the former Lianghu Academy of Classical Learning established by Zhang Zhidong, leader of the Westernization School of the late Qing Dynasty, was a branch campus of the Central Military and Political Academy (also termed the Huangpu Military Academy), jointly founded by the Kuomintang and the CPC. The Huangpu Military Academy was set up on June 16, 1924 by Mr. Sun Yatsen on Huangpu Island of Guangzhou. Five of the 10 marshals of the People's Republic of China—Ye Jianying, Xu Xiangqian, Nie Rongzhen, Chen Yi and Lin Biao—were graduated from the Huangpu Military Academy; 3 senior generals—Xu Guangda, Chen Geng and Luo Ruiqing, 8 generals, 9 lieutenant generals and 8 major generals were also graduated from there. It could be called the cradle of the contemporary marshals and generals.

of China. The Huangpu teachers and cadets trained there had by now successfully launched two eastern expeditions against reactionary warlords, unified the revolutionary bases in Guangdong, and immediately afterwards conducted the Northern Expedition. After the Northern Expeditionary Army attacked and occupied Wuhan in Oct. 1926, the statesmen, while drawing up the blueprint for the branch campus, added a capital "W"-enrolment of the first batch of servicewomen of the revolutionary army.

The general regulation of enrolment of the military academy was published in all the major newspapers of the time and made a great stir throughout the country. In Changsha alone, there were 1,000 or so people who signed up. The force far exceeded that of the old saying of "hundreds responding to a single call."

The applicants had to go through a very strict examination, the scene of which was solemn. Those who cheated were disqualified on the spot.

The enrolment rate for applicants from Hunan was 100 to 1. After the list of successful candidates was published, those who flunked, feeling a sense of injustice for not having been admitted, surrounded the Party Headquarters of the province, which was forced to instruct persons concerned to make public the examination papers and allow representatives of those who had failed in the examination to check them and ascertain that all the papers had been sealed and numbered without names, that grades were given according to the scores of the papers, and that there was no exchange of papers or malpractices, etc. Only by doing so was the disturbance put down.

The sunshine of the early spring of the South bathed the large drill ground of the former Lianghu Academy of Classical Learning in warmth. The uniforms of the servicewomen at drill were soaked with sweat. In marching, the distance covered in each step should be 75 centimetres. To meet this requirement these servicewomen kept raising their legs and swinging their arms. Moreover, they had to finish their meals within 10 minutes. At first, many of the servicewomen felt unaccustomed to such gobbling up, which was considered most disgraceful even at home, let alone in public. Nevertheless, military discipline was rigid. After ten minutes, they must put down their bowls and chopsticks. As a result, quite a few servicewomen, unable to meet the requirement, couldn't have enough. Yet they knew that this was something they had to go through as a soldier.

Their studies of basic theories were also regular as those of the servicemen. Drill Regulations for Foot Soldiers, Shooting Manual, Army Orderlies, these they all had to learn. Besides, they participated in military maneuvers, listened to talks by Yun Daiying on the workers' movement, the students' movement and the historical status of the

proletariat, talks by Shen Yanbing on female emancipation, and talks by Xu Deheng on the ABC of Communism. The academy also frequently invited relevant persons in charge and well-known figures to deliver lectures or speeches on the campus. Mao Zedong was once specially invited to lecture on the peasants' movement in Hunan and Hubei. Song Qingling, Guo Moruo, Chen Duxiu, Qu Qiubai, Wu Yuzhang, Dong Biwu and some others were also invited to the academy to deliver lectures. These good teachers and helpful friends of the cadets opened the eyes of the servicewomen to an unprecedented mental world.

It looked as if history wanted deliberately to test these courageous servicewomen. War headed towards them before their graduation.

In May, 1927, Xia Douyin, division commander of the 14th Independent Division stationed in Yichang, turned traitor and, colluding with Yang Shen, a warlord in Sichuan, launched an attack on Wuhan along the banks of the Yangtze River. The cadets of the military academy and the trainees of the Peasants' Movement Institute were organized into the Central Independent Division, to be under the single command of Ye Ting, division commander of the 24th Division of the 11th Corps. By this time, Ye Ting was already a famous general of the Northern Expedition and the troops headed by him were called an "iron army." The servicewomen all felt lucky and proud to be under his command. In his mobilization talk before the fighting, division commander Ye said: "From this day on, you are no longer cadets of the Central Military Academy. You belong to a regular army now. You are the soldiers of the Central Independent Division. You should be firm and brave enough to shoulder the important revolutionary tasks at present." The speech by this military commander of a little over 30 years old was, like his age, full of youth and vigor. Upon turning his eyes towards the servicewomen in the ranks, he found them firm and composed enough in their expressions to be relied upon. To this unfamiliar and uniquely female force he made the following remark: "You servicewomen also have arduous tasks. In addition to fighting the enemy with guns, you have to carry on the work of arousing the masses of the people. This means you have to conduct propaganda. Besides, you have to assume rescue work." He called on the servicewomen to be daring warriors carrying on the revolution with their pens, their mouths and their actual deeds.

This was a kind of life never before experienced by the servicewomen. Though they did not go to the front to fight at close quarters with the enemy, they did get an idea of what a genuine soldier should be like. The servicewomen, divided into the propaganda team and the ambulance corps, fought from Zhifang to Tuditang and moved forwards towards areas of Jiayu, Puqi, Xianning and Xindi. They put in order towns and village damaged by the rebel forces, pasted up slogans,

distributed leaflets, and helped the folks to return to their homeland. They either delivered speeches on the streets, conducted propaganda from house to house, or helped the masses to resume the Peasants' Society or the Women's Association. Each day they were so lively and so unique. While the troops were pressing forward, the servicewomen often couldn't eat in time. When thirsty, they simply drank some water from the mountain streams; when hungry, they just tightened their belts because of lack of food. Not one of them fell behind. At night they slept in the open on hilltops, spreading army blankets beneath them and covering themselves with raincoats. The South in May happened to be a season of plum rains. The ground was damp and the air cold. When the girls got up before dawn, they could wring water out of the army blankets and their hair was wet through. Huang Jingwen, one of the servicewomen, found herself suffering from bloody blisters on her feet, the result of constant rubbing, and her legs ached so much that she found it hard to step forward again once she stopped. Soon she discovered that many others were in the same plight. Interestingly no one uttered a sound. Perhaps they were afraid that they would pass on their agony to their sisters once they did. After a few days, they all looked upon blisters on their feet as nothing uncommon and began to tease and make fun of one another. You Xi, another servicewoman, even caught a local tyrant by the nickname of "Devil Incarnate," who had attempted to collect military information. Over a month of life on the road transformed these women from being weak, delicate and refined girl students a few months before into servicewomen with good physique, strong willpower and the ability to bear hardships.

In fighting west with the troops, Xie Bingying, one of the servicewomen, wrote *Diary of A Woman Soldier*, which was published in the supplement to the *Central Daily* of that time and made a great stir. She wrote: "The girl students had all secretly signed up for the military academy, without the knowledge of their families or their schools. I believe that at that time, the girl students' motive in joining the army was most probably to break away from the oppression of feudal families and to find a way out for themselves. But once they put on uniforms and bore arms, they began to think differently. They came to realize that on their shoulders were the tasks of carrying the national revolution to an end and building a prosperous and strong China."

The revolutionary army defeated the troops led by Xia Douyin at Tuditang. When the servicewomen came back with the army from their western expedition, the then Women's Association of Hubei presented them with a silk banner, on which was written: "Epochmaking!"

After the defeat of the Great Revolution in China, the Central Military Academy decided upon an earlier graduation. The women cadets

were not given any promises, just as they were not when they joined the army in the first place. The only thing to show for their life in the academy was that they could no longer return to their old selves. The status of having been a cadet, like a birthmark, was forever printed in their lives. Decades later, many of these cadets took part again in the Nanchang Uprising, the Guangzhou Uprising and the Long March. Some were even taken to the enemy's court and prison. While they all enriched their experience, none of them could forget the short period of life and fighting in the military academy, which was a most significant overture to their long life.

## 2. Anonymity of Women Before Enlistment

In the past, women in China, whether rich or poor, were denied any social status or human dignity. Not only have I read such a history, I have also heard many true stories of this kind.

A 6-year-old girl was about to leave home and go to work in a stranger's family. Unwilling to part from home, her parents, and her sisters with whom she had been together from morning to night, she cried and cried. Stroking her head, the girl's mother coaxed her: "Too many girls in our family. Besides, we don't have enough to eat. No girls in the other family. So they like girls very much. You are going to be a daughter for them there." She was hence led away. She kept crying all the way, turning backwards towards home the whole time until the thatched cottage of her family could be seen no more.

On getting to the family where her mother had said she was going to be a daughter, the little girl found that there were three girls already in the family. One of them said to her: "You're still in the dark. You're here to be my younger brother's wife!" The girl cried once more.

From then on, a great deal of strenuous manual labor fell on the shoulders of this 6-year-old little girl. She had to go outside to cut firewood, bundle it up, and carry it back home. Unable to do all this at first, she couldn't escape from being beaten. She also had to fetch water. Unable to carry a big basin of water, she was beaten again. In addition, she had to carry on the back a child one year older than herself, and if by chance she let the child fall, she would definitely receive another beating. Her fiance, four years older than her, complaining that his clothes had not been washed clean, would beat her by seizing her braids first. All this proved to be too much for the little girl, who had no choice but to run back to her mother's house. Yet even her own mother had no alternative but to give her a slight beating and then send her back. Thus she was beaten black and blue. She was full of pent-up grievances, but where could she pour them out?

There were some other child brides in the vicinity, and to them the little girl turned for sympathy. She would talk with them about her grievances and cry. Yet what was the use of crying? The 6 girls in her family were all sent away in this way, so were girls of other families around, and some were even younger than her.

Time thus rolled on. In the eyes of this girl the years were like an endless picture. When she was very little, the picture was colorful, but gradually the colours faded until the picture was almost dark. The wooden hook she used to carry the firewood had by now been rubbed shiny and the 6-year-old child had grown into a big 19-year-old girl. Yet her knowledge of the outside world was still rather limited.

One day one of her elder sisters running to tell her quietly that a women's organization had been established in their place and it was to make revolution. The girl couldn't fully understand the word "revolution," but somehow she seemed to realize that it would bring some changes in her lot. She went to it and from there she joined the Red Army and became a servicewoman. For the first time in her life she had a name of her own. Before, she only knew that she was called "Child" by others.

Among the thousand or so people conferred the title of general in New China in 1955, she was the only woman general. Her name was Li Zhen.

Li Zhen's legendary experience sounds like tales from The Arabian Nights. Nevertheless, the humiliating female mark of "child bride" was thus firmly printed in the curriculum vitae of the woman general.

To fully understand Li Zhen as well as other servicewomen in the Red Army, one needs to gain a clear idea of what a "child bride" means, for it constituted the beginning of their lives. Originally I thought the subject of child brides was simple. As the term suggests, a child bride is one who, like Li Zhen, starts to be a daughter-in-law of a certain family from childhood. But how did they get to the families in those days? Were they taken there or did they get there by themselves? I took up the phone and called a senior servicewoman who was once a child bride. Unexpectedly the call lasted for an hour and extended for another hour the next day. At last I came to see that even a book could be written on the system of child brides in China. The situation varied both in the South and the North and in rich and poor families. The child brides were sent away in different ways. Some were carried away the moment they were born, some were sent away when they were a few months old, some went when they were a few years old and some went when they were in their teens...Its popularity is beyond imagination.

"I was born in a scholarly family. Still I became a child bride. In those years girls were not regarded as their parents' own flesh and bones. They were like steamed buns which were thrown away if people did not want to eat them," said the caller on the other side of the

phone. She was getting on for seventy and was no longer in a temper when she said all this. Yet the shadow of childhood was still hanging over her. She told me later that the day we talked over the phone, she was sleepless the whole night. The young girls she knew in her childhood appeared one after another before her eyes: "The child bride of my aunt's younger brother went to our school every day, looking for clothes to wash. Her brothers and sisters also studied there, but they did not talk with her when they met, nor did they feel any loss of face. She was after all a child bride. There was no contact between them, for a married girl was like water thrown out.. The child bride could make no more than a few fen for washing each dress."

Our talk about child brides evolved on like TV serials, with each act beyond expectation. "Have you heard of girls being drowned?"

"Yes. Weren't they drowned in water?" At last there was something within my imagination: girl babies in water whose life ended without a struggle.

"No. They were drowned in urine. In our Zhejiang Province, there were two kinds of nightstools. The kind used for emptying the bowels was relatively low, whereas the kind used for urinating was higher, about the height of teatables of today, and could contain quite a few dozen jin of urine. These were mostly put behind the bed, and girl babies were thrust into them and drowned in urine after their delivery if their families did not want them. They were not drowned in water. As to how many girl babies were drowned at that time, no one knows. I think I was lucky enough to have survived."

"And there was a special tool for beating child brides." These words put my mind in a blank. I simply had to put aside the phone to get a pen and some paper and ask her to speak slowly.

"That was something made of bamboo bark and slices of castor. It could cause great pain when used to beat people, resulting only in some superficial rather than internal injuries. In other words it was used to beat child brides until they pleaded guilty, not to leave them disabled or dead. After all they were still daughters-in-law of one's own family afterwards. I was often beaten in those days and even today I cannot forget about it."

"Why didn't you run away?"

"Some did run away. One of my middle school girl classmates fell in love with her teacher. She was really bold. Afterwards she gave birth to two girls, but her mother-in-law didn't show up at all and didn't give a damn to her. The first baby was sent away to others the moment she was born as if the mother were a prostitute. So was the second baby. She wasn't taken home and accepted by the family until she gave birth at last to a boy."

In those days, each freedom-craving girl was heavily laden with

grief.

When we talked over the phone for the third time, it was already one evening after the Spring Festival of 1995.

"I've found additional material on child brides," said the senior servicewoman. She was so earnest. "You must have heard of Xiao Wangdong, a famous general. In an article about him there was a recording like this: a 4-year-old girl went to his family to be his child bride. By the time he left to join the revolutionary ranks, she was still too young for them to consummate. But she stayed on in his family to take care of his mother until the latter died of illness in 1947. The family was too poor to make funeral arrangements. Thus she sold herself, bought a coffin and some graveclothes buried the old woman. The child bride, who showed such filial piety, sold herself to a man with the nickname of "Black Door-God." This husband of hers would often beat and curse her, until General Xiao, returning home after liberation, helped her to renounce her marriage with the man. This is something that happened in our own time. But somehow I'm really upset by it. Imagine a woman selling herself as if she were an article! It sounds as if the story were far away from us, as if it were something that took place in the Ming or Qing Dynasty. I've got the article here and can come and get it any time you like."

This was a beautifully moving story, yet it was simultaneously a story the cruelty of which bordered upon self-suicide.

What astonishes people most is they themselves, especially when they are enlarged and lengthened.

The TV program was on the special topic of women, "'95Half of the Sky." Dress models were coming on and off the stage in irregular lights...Topics on women today need no longer to be concerned with child brides. But we must not forget the story of the Red Armywoman Li Zhen and others like her, for that is also the source of our own lives.

"To be a Red Armywoman first of all to gain the status of a human being," said Lin Yuqin, Marshal Luo Ronghuan's wife and commander of the Women's Working and Fighting Battalion of the Army. This year she is more than 80 years old, and yet she still enjoys very good health. To this servicewoman who has led a military life, war seems to have just occurred yesterday. Her mind has been tempered clear and logical by the long years: "Human beings aren't animals. He or she has blood and flesh, thinking and the right to choose. Women in Old China, however, were like animals with flesh and blood but without thinking or the freedom to choose for close to 2,000 years." She inquired in detail about my plan of interviews, urging again and again: "Don't fix your eyes only on the wives of senior officers, mistaking status for representation. Many of our servicewomen were ordinary people from their youth to death. It was they who won the right for us women to



be genuine human beings."

After the failure of the Great Revolution in 1927, the center of the Chinese revolution turned from cities to the countryside. The sparks of the revolution kindled again in Jinggangshan of Jiangxi Province. Part of the troops that had taken part in the Nanchang and Autumn Harvest Uprisings joined forces here, formed another force named the Chinese Worker's and Peasants' Red Army, and established successively the Jinggangshan base in Jiangxi, the Xiand-Gan base, Chuan-Shan base and the E-Yu-Wan base.

The Red Army in the mountain areas continued to spread the truths of the Great Revolution, arousing masses of people, establishing Soviet governments, setting up women's organizations, running literacy classes, and conducting propaganda on female emancipation. At that time, not only were there servicewomen in the organizations at various levels of the Red Army, women officers in the Red Army also served concurrently as women cadres of the local political powers. The development of the forces of the Chinese servicewomen in these impoverished mountain areas couldn't be compared by that of any of the later periods. There appeared then establishments of independent squads, platoons, companies, battalions, regiments, divisions of servicewomen and women officers of corresponding posts. The number of servicewomen reached a maximum of nearly 10,000.

Quite a number of servicewomen in the Red Army had been child brides. Some of them had run away individually, whereas others joined the army in groups. Lin Yuqin thus described the situation of that time: one day, Liu Baixing, one of the women soldiers ran into my room hurriedly and shouted towards me excitedly: "Battalion commander, platoon leader Zhang brought back a company! Go and see for yourself!" She took hold of my hand and we ran outside. Between the walls of people I saw platoon leader Zhang, a woman, striding forward with her chest thrown out and followed by a crowd of girls and young wives wearing patched-over clothes. Some of them wore their hair in a bun or coil, some wore single braids, and others even wore necklets and bracelets. Though they didn't march in step, they walked in high spirits. This was a rarely seen force and attracted crowds of lookers-on. Platoon leader Zhang had been away especially to expand the Red Army. The place she went to was Enyang River. There happened to be a village fair that day and the streets were a sea of people, many of whom were child brides with baskets on the back who had come out to sell mountain products. The moment platoon leader Zhang stood on a table, some folks discovered that she was a Red Armywoman. But there were those who did not believe this and started a debate among themselves. Hearing their debate, platoon leader Zhang said: "Dear folks, I'm a Red Armywoman. Some young wives in front of the table watched her with suspicion when they saw that her dress and

hair style were the same as those of men and shook their heads while smiling. They didn't believe her words until she bent over and let them see the holes in her ears. Then they all began to take interest in this Red Armywoman. Long engaged in propaganda work, platoon leader Zhang knew what they were most concerned about. Using her own experience as an example, she said: "Folks and sisters! I'm from Huang'an, Hubei Province. My father, a long-term hired hand for a rich man, became ill as a result of overwork and died when I was 9 years old. When I was 12, my mother died, too. Unable to support me, my brother sent me away to another family as a child bride. Like the child brides here, I worked like a slave and yet was often cursed and beaten. As soon as the Red Army arrived, I became a Red Armywoman. In our army ranks, there are many armywomen who, like me, used to be child brides. Today, they have raised their heads and are no longer exploited by rich men or cursed and beaten by their parents-in-law." Her words struck a sympathetic chord among many of the child brides there. Immediately more than a dozen signed up and towards evening a force of around 70 to 80 people was assembled. When she led them back to Dehan, the whole city was stirred. All at once our battalion was expanded to about 500 people.

All the brands of pain left on women by the feudal society one could find on the Red Armywomen. Wang Zenan, Lin Yuqin's partner and political commissar of the Women's Working and Fighting Battalion, was a servicewoman with bound feet. Bound feet were the so-called "3-inch golden lotuses" eulogized by the feudal age. According to historical records, women's bound feet can be divided into 5 categories and 18 types. Feet binding, a sign of the vicious development of females being treated as playthings, not only deprived women of the ability to work but also left them subservient to men. Though we cannot be sure about the number of women with bound feet in the feudal age, we cannot help trembling with fear at the thought of the various acts of feet binding. Of the 10 toes, 9 phalanges had to be broken. Such man-made cruel torture had to be borne by girls not yet of age, for grown-up girls would have feet too big to be made beautiful through binding. At that time women with unbound feet were not only looked down upon all their lives but were also affected in their marriages.

Wang Zenan was desperate to break free of the shackles she was fettered by. The Women's Working and Fighting Battalion both sewed uniforms and transported provisions and materials to the front. With no cars and very few beasts of burden in the Red Army, the servicewomen had to rely on their legs. The gullies Wang Zenan tramped over, the mountain streams she crossed, and the trenches she strode across, were too numerous to be counted even by herself. People admired her contributions and sacrifices, but her idea was very simple then: despite all the hardships, she was at last a genuine human being.

### 3.A Red Army Woman Division Commander Knowing Five Languages

Forward, forward. The soldiers' responsibility is high and the women's rancour deep. In the past Hua Mulan enlisted in place of her father; today the Women's Detachment bears arms for the sake of the people.

This Company Anthem of the Red Detachment of Women is about the story of an armed force of women which existed only for two years in the history of Chinese armed struggles. Still people cannot forget the company commander who died a martyr's death and the force that fought to the last person. When the story was made into a film, the Women's Detachment, "brought back to life" again, became widely known.

In narrating the story of the servicewomen one must write about this Women's Detachment on an island, which became symbolic of the pride and glory of the Chinese women. After the liberation of the whole country, Chairman Mao Zedong personally presented a submachine gun to Feng Zengmin, second Party representative of the Women's Detachment.

When I got to the birthplace of the Women's Detachment, I could still feel the ptimiyibr dimplivity and vigour of Qiongya in the South Seas titled "the ends of the earth." Today this southernmost part of the vast expanse of he country has become a province and a special free trade Zone of economic development. Though Hainan of today and that of the past cannot be mentioned in the same breath, yet when I first landed on the island 7 years ago, I was deeply impressed by the residential cottages, put up with the barks of coconut trees and without electricity, among the coconut forests exclusive to subtropical zones. Poverty and beauty are two discordant extremes of the island. Looking further back into history, we can see that the place was once an out-of-way wild beach and riprap where the court sent the enlisted and the banished. Su Shi, a great poet of the Song Dynasty and a demoted official, was once banished here and left a famous poem. By the beginning of this century, modern industries had already landed in China, and yet the wind of human civilization became a spent force when it blew here across the inland. Though the island had become an assembling place for the Han, Li, Miao, Hui and other nationalities, there wasn't much change in the primitive mode of production of slash-and-burn cultivation whereby they lived. The sea called for the men of Qiongya and survival forced them to travel across the high seas. The majority of the early Chinese labor came from here.

Life was extremely hard for the women folks on this impoverished island. On their weak shoulders fell the heavy labour of seed-sowing and harvesting of three crops a year and all the household chores. Yet the industrious and independent women of Hainan didn't enjoy any

special honor for all this. On the contrary, evil forces of dealing in women, drug taking and whore going as well as poverty and backwardness combined to make them feel terribly suppressed. Maybe herein lies the reason of the blooming and quick fading of the forces of servicewomen, representative of the progressive women of China.

When the CPC established Soviet power in Qiongya, it won support from the island people. The naturally bold and unsophisticated Hainan women joined one after another the Red Guards, the Young Pioneers, and asked to join the Red Army. To encourage the Qiongyawomen's enthusiasm for participation in war, the special committee of Qiongya of the CPC and the Second Independent Division of the Red Army chose in 1930 120 young women from 6 to 7 hundred women and formed the Women's Special Task Company, with three platoons under its command and called the Women's Detachment. This force was not divorced from production. In addition to military drilling, they had to till the land, harvest and cooperate with the main forces in military operations in times of war. In June 1931, together the main forces of the Red Army, they succeeded in an ambush, capturing alive Chen Zeyuan, commander in chief of the communist-suppressing troops of the Kuomintang in Yuehui County, killing and capturing a hundred or so enemies, and seizing a batch of fire arms and ammunition, with not a single member of the Women's Detachment being wounded or killed. Their fame was greatly enhanced.

By 1932, the Women's Detachment developed into two companies. In August of the same year, Chen Jitang, a warlord in Guangdong, mounted a large-scale offensive on the Soviet areas of Qiongya to support Chiang Kaishek's fourth counter-revolutionary encirclement and suppression. The special committee and organization of Qiongya, covered by the main forces of the Red Army, transferred towards Muruishan. The enemy troops caught up when they retreated to Ma'anling, and the first company of the Women's Detachment and the first battalion of the Red Army were ordered to check the enemies. They fought a fierce battle with the enemies for three days and nights and won. The first company of the Women's Detachment then received orders to retreat. The 8 servicewomen who left behind to bring up the rear all laid down their lives after running out of ammunition and food supplies. When the first company of the Women's Detachment retreated to Muruishan, they were surrounded by the massive forces of the enemy. A few days of fierce fighting left most of the soldiers dead or scattered, and Feng Zengmin, the commander, and 8 others were caught and imprisoned. The second company of the Women's Detachment originally intended to retreat to Liulianling with the third regiment of the Red Army, but was scattered in Huiyue County due to dire circumstances. Thus the Women's Detachment disintegrated.

History did not arrange this moment on purpose. In the second year

of the moving and tragic disappearance of the Women's Detachment of Hainan, the Chinese interior basin of Sichuan saw the rise of another red force of women, which belonged to the Fourth Front Red Army in the Chuan-Shan bases. Later it evolved into a force with the largest number of servicewomen and the most complete establishments in the Red Army.

In March 1933, on the sports ground of a school in Tongjiang County of Sichuan Province was held an inaugural meeting of a Women's Independent Battalion directly under the general headquarters of the Fourth Front Army. More than 300 Red Armywomen, wearing uniforms and five-star army caps and armed with longbarreled guns and handguns and broadswords, lined up on the sports ground in good order and high spirits. Almost the whole county town of Tongjiang was stirred and the sports ground was packed with lookers-on. Sichuan was the most populous province in China and in every 10 Chinese there was one Sichuanese. So the Sichuanese didn't pay much attention to people. But having never before seen any servicewomen, they gazed in surprise at these girl soldiers. Two months later these girl soldiers won a battle and seized most of the war trophies of the battle. Then a year later, the Women's Independent Battalion was expanded to a Women's Independent Regiment with more than 2,000 people.

In Feb. 1935, the Women's Independent Regiment was expanded to a Women's Independent Division with two regiments under its command.

Who was the division commander? Naturally people tend to associate this person with the male Party representative of the Women's Detachment as shown in the film. This is not due to the view that men are superior to women. The force of Chinese servicewomen was after all too young then. Could there be someone as well versed in both polite letters and martial arts as Hong Changqing (the Party representative in the film)?

The times produce their heroes. The woman commanding this women's force was indeed well versed in both ancient and modern learning and widely known for leading 500 peasant women in capturing a regiment of the White Army. Her name was Zhang Qiuqin.

This is a name rather unfamiliar to our age.

With the help of Directory Inquiries 114, I called up the Textile Industry where Zhang Qiuqin worked after liberation, and inquired about her from the General Office to the Old Cadres Bureau, and from there to the Personnel Department, but the answer was the same: "Sorry, no one knows."

When I was about to give up all hope, I read in a book of a woman cadre who, victimized as a Rightist in 1957, once worked in the Ministry of Textile Industry. Thus I called up the Old Cadres Bureau of the Ministry of the Textile Industry again and inquired cautiously whether this "Rightist" of those years was still alive. As a result I was

indirectly but luckily given the material on Zhang Qiuqin.

Let's read the experience of the 31-year-old woman division commander and concurrently commander of the first regiment.

Born in a scholarly family in Shimen Town of Chongde County, Zhejiang Province, Zhang Qiuqin, from childhood on, benefited from directions from her father, editor of a daily newspaper in Jiaxing. She was a top student of Shimen Primary School. From 1921 on, she studied successively in Hangzhou Women's Normal University in Zhejiang, Shanghai Patriotic Girls' School and Nanjing Art Training School. In the spring of 1924, Zhang Qiuqin entered Shanghai University. Here her fate made a definite turn. In April 1923, Deng Zhongxia took up the post of dean of studies in this university and started a reform in the school system and a reshuffle of teachers, engaging Qu Qiubai as dean of the Sociological Department and Chen Wangdao as dean of the Chinese Literature Department. A number of communists and progressive scholars like Cai Heshen, Zhang Tailei, Yun Daiying, Shen Yanbing, Tian Han, Zheng Zhenze and Feng Zikai came to teach here one after another. Zhang Qiuqin embraced Marxism here and joined the Socialist Youth League. At that time Xiang Jingyu, a CPC member, was in charge of the Women's Movement in Shanghai and often came to Shanghai University to discuss with the girl students the current situation and issues concerning women. She held that the politically awakened women intellectuals should go and work among the working women. With her mobilization, Zhang Qiuqin as well as some others organized the girl students of Shanghai University and other colleges in setting up with worn-out straw mats and thin bamboo strips, Zhang Qiuqin made the acquaintance of women workers who had to do hard labour. She taught them to learn to read, write and sing and helped them to manage household affairs and take care of the sick and disabled. She came to tie more and more closely the tragic lot of the Chinese women with that of her own. To seek revolutionary truths, she and more than 100 other progressive young people embarked, in Oct. 1925, on a Soviet freighter for Yat-sen University of Moscow where they started a 5-year study. In addition to learning political and military sciences, she established a long-term contact with a textile and learned textile techniques and management know-how.

In the autumn of 1930, Zhang Qiuqin left Moscow and returned to Shanghai after passing through many different places. She became a member of the Eastern Hu District Committee of Shanghai and was in charge of work on women. In 1931 she was dispatched to the then E-Yu-Wan revolutionary base and started her career as a servicewoman. In this remote and backward place where Hubei, Henan and Anhui shared a common boundary, her identity was rather noticeable. At first, she served as dean of the Political Department in the Peng (Pai)-Yang (Yin)

Military and Political College where the main task was to train cadres at the basic levels for the Red Army. Each day, with the first rays of the morning sun, she would get to the drill ground before anyone else. With an army cap on her head, a leather belt around her waist, and a handgun tilted on one side, she would drill together with the cadets. She was also in charge of offering lectures on Marxist-Leninist theories, conducting education concerning the current situation and tasks and teaching revolutionary songs. In addition, together with the cadets, she participated in the construction of defense works and trenches as well as in shooting and field maneuvers. In 1932, she was appointed director of the Political Department of the 73rd Division of the Fourth Front Red Army. In Dec. of the same year she was appointed director of the General Political Department of the Fourth Front Army. In 1935, the Women's Independent Division of the Fourth Front Army came into being and she served as division commander and concurrently commander of the First Regiment.

The soldiers were all aware that this woman commander, with a slender figure and delicate features, was adept in both polite letters and martial arts. In 1933, the 500-people Red Guards led by her ran into a regiment of the enemy's Independent Division under Liu Hanxiong's command. Discovering that their opponents were numerous Red Armywomen wearing signs of red cloth, the enemy officer immediately ordered an attack. But the soldiers, seeing the situation, were reluctant to open fire. Zhang Qiuqin seized the opportunity and led the armywomen in launching a political offensive. All of a sudden, shouts of slogans by the women soldiers echoed in the valley: "Revolutionary soldier brothers, you are welcome to the Red Army!" "The Red Army is the vanguard in fighting with the Japanese devils!" The enemy officer flew into a rage and forced the soldiers to open fire. But one of the soldiers said to the enemy's regiment commander with anger: "I've never before seen troops that protect the nation and the people. Why should we fight with people on our own side rather than the Japanese devils? And now we have to fight with our women folks. It's really outrageous!" The enemy officer shot the soldier to death at once. By this time the enemy troops were filled with indignation and there was an outburst of shouts: "Let's kill the reactionary officer and join the Red Army!" They turned their guns and arrested the enemy's regiment commander and battalion commander. While shouting propaganda at the enemy troops, Zhang Qiuqin and the women soldiers quickly rushed to the enemy's position, captured all their equipment, and disposed of the reactionary officers. Part of the enemy troops joined the Red Army whereas others were given traveling expenses to go back home. The news of "500 peasant women capturing a regiment of the White Army" spread throughout Sichuan and was published in a couple

of well-known newspapers. Zhang Qiuqin, both brave and resourceful, received increased respect.

In 1936, the Women's Independent Division led by Zhang Qiuqin took part in the Long March together with the Fourth Front Army. Among the troops of the Red Army that participated in the Long March, this division covered the greatest distance and walked for the longest of time. Together with more than 10'000 servicemen, they plodded through the marshlands for three times and twice scaled snow-topped mountains. The scale of their force as well as their sacrifices was rare in the history of the Red Army. After the War of Resistance Against Japan broke out, the Women's Independent Division was redesignated as Women's Anti-Japanese Vanguard and follow the Western Route Army in crossing the Yellow River and starting a western expedition. In March 1937, Zhang Qiuqin was captured in a battle after running out of ammunition and food supplies and was escorted as a principal criminal from the Northwest to Nanjing. Rescued by Zhou Enlai, Ye Jianying and others, she was then set free. At the end of the same year, she went to Yan'an via Xi'an and entered the Central Party School to study. After graduation, she served as commander of the Women's Group in the Anti-Japanese Military and Political College of Yan'an. In 1939 the Chinese Women's University was founded and she served as dean of studies. The post she assumed is up to now the highest in the independent establishments of servicewomen. All her comrades-in-arms miss this learned leader. The then 16-year-old armywoman Li Kaifen, recalling the movement of suppressing counter-revolutionaries in the Soviet areas, said that it was Zhang Qiuqin who pulled her out from the grave pit where " counter-revolutionaries " were buried alive. " Won't you let go of a 16-year -old child? " said Zhang Qinqiu. When obstructed and accused of undermining the movement, she spoke sternly out of a sense of justice: " Go to the Political Department and ask for me, Zhang Qiuqin! " This " little red devil " who was thus rescued later took the office of associate political commissar of the Logistics Department of Beijing Military Command.

After the liberation of the whole nation, this servicewoman who was closely bound up with workers from youth onwards and studied assiduously textile techniques and management know-how in the Soviet Union, eventually took up her specialized post as she had long wished and became vice-minister of the country's Ministry of Textile Industry. She spared no effort in the performance of her duty for the sake of the prosperity of the country's textile industry. The technique of degumming bast fibre spinning, which has brought innumerable economic benefits for the state, was developed as a result of her concern.



#### 4." Larks " in a Men's World

Long ago I saw a picture, a picture of a servicewoman before enlistment.

She had two big and extremely beautiful eyes. But you couldn't see these touching eyes in this picture. With her eyelids lowered, she looked rather dejected. " Something the matter with the picture? " I asked. No, she answered. Girls at that time shouldn't look up at the opposite sex. The photographer of the photo studio was a male, hence the picture. The girl in that picture was not yet 15.

This was the position fixed for women by the feudal society and the family. In China the old teaching of " no physical contact between a man and a woman except between man and wife " was of long standing.

Among a vast accumulation of disorderly and unsystematic data I looked for the traces of the Red Armywomen and collected pictures and original handwriting left by them, wondering who it was that first turned on the mysterious transceiver; who it was that took part in the running of the first hospital; and who it was that set up the first stage in the Red Army... These technical arms of composite formation were the first ones in the Chinese army. How did the servicewomen who had grown up under the nurture of the old feudal teachings start to associate with the males and how was the cooperation between them?

In the ranks of the Red Army could be seen the heroic bearings of servicewomen in almost all organizations and arms.

The First Front Red Army and the people in the Soviet areas of Jiangxi spent the New Year's Even of 1930 in the gaiety of the great victory of the first campaign against " encirclement and suppression." This fighting not only saw the complete destruction of more than 9,000 men of the two brigades of the 18th Division and one division headquarters of the Kuomintang, the capturing alive of division commander Zhang Huizan, but also the seizing of an enemy transceiver. Compared with the big victory of the battle, the seizing of the transceiver seemed rather insignificant. But in the history of the development of our armed forces, it marked a historic beginning: the Red Army started to have its own wireless communications. Wang Zheng and Liu Yin, two captured enemy telegraph operators, were incited to the General Headquarters of the Red Army like distinguished guests. They were warmly received by Mao Zedong and Zhu De, who instructed them to set up the Red Army's own radio station. This was Jan. 3, 1931. The seized transceiver was no longer intact. In the fighting to wipe out the enemies, the Red Armymen, not knowing the use of transceivers, smashed the transmitter the way they destroyed the enemies. It became, therefore, a dumb that could only listen. Even so, three days later, in the compound of the staff section of the General Headquarters of

the Red Army there occurred the timely toots of the charger and the first radio station of the Red Army was set up: a receiver with three lights was placed on a square table for 8 people offered by the folks, and outside the window was the high erection of receiving aeri als. There were also pencils, writing paper made from bamboo, rape oil lamps, and a pocket watch contributed by a certain leading comrade.

The Red Army needed its own technical staff of wireless communications as well as transceivers. Hence the first class of wireless communications emerged as the times required. The 12 students were all young people selected from various troops and possessing certain levels of education. Among them 3 were servicewomen, who were both students and staff members. Their study was carried on in the intervals of fighting. Sometimes the time for rest in the course of marching was also made full use of. Their classrooms were in the folks' central rooms, in the courtyards and under the big trees along the roads. Door planks, bed planks, bricks, and stones became their desks. A code exerciser and a fingerboard were their chief teaching aids. The left thumb of each person also became self-provided fingerboard and was used to practice transmitting messages by radio... These data I found in the recollections written by the editorial department of the history of posts and telecommunication of the three servicewomen. They even didn't mention their names. Natural and silent--this was perhaps the initial state of the servicewomen in the predominantly male troops.

The years dragged on. Today the Red Army has become precious historical wealth. We are no longer able to talk with the three communications servicewomen of those years.

With the help of Aunt Lin Yueqin's contact, I found her, Wang Xinlan, the youngest servicewoman in the Red Army in those days and the only communications servicewoman who served as head of a radio station in the years of war. In 1933, Wang Xinlan, together with two elder brothers and one elder sister, joined the Red Army. That year she was only 9. After the Long March, the 14-year-old Xinlan was sent to the Red Army's telecommunications school to learn the techniques of receiving and dispatching messages. At the age of 16 she became head of the radio station of the 115th Division of the Eighth Route Army, and her military prowess struck terror among the enemies. If experience can be said to be the greatest sum of wealth in a person's life, then God handed over to Wang Xinlan experience together with tribulations.

She was from a revolutionary family. Her father was an enlightened gentleman and her uncle, Wang Weizhou, was the founder of the Guerrilla Forces in Shandong. It was her uncle that she followed when she joined the Red Army at the age of 9. He was then commander of the 33rd Corps. Her uniform was tailored with that of a grown-up. Soon afterwards, she left her uncle's troops for the propaganda team of the Fourth Front

Army. After the Long March, she met her uncle again in Yan'an. He said: " I let your father down .He entrusted the four of you brothers and sisters to me, but now you're the only one left. All your elder brothers and sister laid down their lives during the Long March." Holding onto her uncle, she cried in great grief. She felt herself growing up and becoming mature all of a sudden. Thanks to her indomitable willpower, this little soldier, though not well educated, graduated with honours from the Red Army's telecommunications school. She left the then relatively stable Yan'an and passed through many places for a year, enduring countless hardships and difficulties. She was even pursued by the Japanese devils along the way. But nothing could weaken this servicewoman's determination to go to the front. Wang Xinlan literally walked to the 115th Division, the Eighth Route Army's front in Shandong. Before long she was appointed head of the news station of the Political Department of the 115th Division. By that time, radio stations had become the Eighth Route Army's chief means of communications and were available from the detachments to the regiments. But the technical staff appeared rather deficient as compared with the intensely fierce hostilities.

The 16-year-old head of the radio station was in charge of 4 telegraph operators and a squad of station guards. All were male except for her. The radio station was a place where skills were very important. A poorly skilled person wouldn't get along well there. The dozen or so servicemen both worshipped and esteemed this superior of theirs. Having the greatest technical competence, she would operate the transceiver herself whenever there were major operations or the weather was awful. Radio stations of both higher and lower levels preferred to cooperate with her. As time passed, on hearing her voice, the other side would salute her with codes of the transceiver. Moreover, her male comrades of the same occupation sent her a graceful title: Lark. On hearing the voice of their " lark, " they would be delighted and excited. For a week, she didn't operate the transceiver and almost the whole army worried about her: Why had the " lark " stopped singing? Then one day, a station head pushed open the door of the commander's room without shouting report first: " The lark has sung, has sung again! " Hearing the news was like winning a big victory to the troops.

In the harsh circumstances of war, the radio station had to transfer constantly with the headquarters of the division. It often so happened that the enemy had entered the village before they had time to get back their aerials. " Don't panic. We'll make it." The composure of the woman station head who was like a goddess was both reliable and calming.

In addition to marching and fighting, the station was responsible for receiving and copying news. Apart from news broadcasted from Yan'an,

they also received news by the United Press International of the U.S., Reuters of England, and the biggest News Agency of Japan. Working both day and night, they often couldn't go to bed when they were sleepy, and when they could go to bed they had already passed their sleepiness. Though she could be relieved by others, Wang Xinlan couldn't set her heart at rest, because this was the life line of thousands of people. Even her dreams smelled of the smoke of gunpowder. She would often wake up with a start after a short while's sleep, rise up immediately and go and have a look in the room of transceivers. She began to suffer from neurasthenia when she was a teenager. After the success of the War of Resistance Against Japan, Xinlan was asked about her intentions. The woman head of the radio station answered in earnest: " My greatest wish is to sleep a whole night's sleep."

The red Army in the cols had to start from scratch in everything. The simplicity and crudity of conditions were as astonishing as the hardships, so much so that in the Red Army's initial stage, it often occurred that medical equipment in the rear such as gauze, disinfectants and other battle had started. The newly enlisted women medical orderlies were confronted with such embarrassing situations, and more.

Recalling the situation of rescuing the wounded in the Jinggangshan base in 1928, armywoman Zhou Shunu said: " The battle was being fought in both old and new Qixilings. Due to lack of guns in the Red Army, the peasant self-defense corps mostly fought with spears and broadswords. Moreover, there were no strong defense works on the ridges. As a result, in the initial stage of the fighting, the Red Army suffered great casualties. With the wounded carried one after another into the ancestral temple, intense rescue work began."

Touching a man's body for the first time was embarrassing. Some were too scared to do anything and their eyes were filled with horror. Men, blood, these were all taboos to traditional females. The revolutionary servicewomen were by no means perfect. They showed both the brand of the feudal system and the innate weakness of females. But war shortened the distance that usually had to be covered over a long period of time. Without disinfectants, they used salt solution instead; without gauze, the girls tore their scarfs to dress the wounds; without hemostatics, they immediately organized men to gather medical herbs in the nearby fields.

To serve people on one's own side, one could forget everything out of sympathy and compassion. But among the wounded there were also soldiers of the White Army, who were really disgusting to the servicewomen. Unwilling to bind up wounds for these " bad eggs " and pouting their lips, they began to reason with Zhou Shunu. The latter

tried patiently to talk them round, reminding them of the song they often sang: " Listen to me, White Army brothers. Why do you shoulder guns and fight? The officers live in ease and comfort while you die. Who will pity you when you are wounded, disabled, sick or dead? " Zhou said these soldiers were also from poor families and had been forced to fight for Chiang Kaishek. Once they were rescued by the Red Armywomen they would know who were good to them. Zhou Shunu and the rescue corps didn't stop working until noon, when the reports of gun gradually became rare. Then they found their uniforms drenched with sweat. But upon being told by people from the front that their troops had won a big victory and that two commanding officers--Yang Chisheng of the 9th Division of the Gan Army and Yang Ruxuan of the 27th Division of the Xiang Army of the Kuomintang had been gotten rid of, the silent and exhausted Red Armywomen became excited again. This successful battle had been directed by Zhu De, commander in chief of the Red Army. He specially praised this force of servicewomen who hadn't been to the front.

The first thing Zhou Shunu and the rescue corps did after getting out of the blood-covered temple which had been used as a medical aid station was to propagate the news of the victory. They composed a series of jingles which, when performed by the servicewomen, attracted enthusiastic applause from the soldiers and villagers. Who can say that they didn't contribute to the success of the battle? Since then, the role of servicewomen in medical treatment and propaganda has been carried on. Today, 80% of the servicewomen are playing an active role in hospitals, communications stations and art troupes.

#### 5.A " Red Dancing Star " Bringing International Art to the Red Army

In 1931, there occurred two great events in the central Soviet area of Ruijin, Jiangxi: the birth of the first art school of the Red Army--Gorky Drama School, and the establishment of the first troupe of the Red Army--the August First Troupe. The founders were two servicewomen. They were the " red dancing star " Li Bochao and her classmate in the Soviet Union and a woman cadet of the Huangpu Military Academy Wei Gongzhi. Li Bochao served as principal of the drama school, wherein were set up drama, singing and dancing classes. There was also a professional troupe--the Soviet Troupe, viz. the former August First Troupe, and Li Bochao served as director. The school trained successively more than 1,000 students and over 60 troupes for the Red Army. Among these the most active and outstanding were the Soldiers' Troupe of the First Army Group, the Frontline Troupe of the Third Army Group, and the Forward Troupe of the Fifth Army Group of the Red Army. Most of the plays put on by the various troupes were written by

Li Bochao. Expanding the Red Army, Victory at All Costs, Union of Workers and Peasants, Go and Resist Japan Together and some other works written by her were all most popular and welcome plays in the Soviet areas. As the founder of the Red Army's first troupe--the August First Troupe, Li Bochao was at once a playwright, director, organizer of the evening parties and a chief performer.

Wei Gongzhi, Li's classmate, was also a very charming woman. She was good at play writing, directing, dancing and singing. What was beyond imagination was that this Red Army artist had two "liberated feet" -- feet unbound, with injured phalanges. When she said she wanted to have her hair cut and her feet unbound before she joined the revolutionary ranks, her big brother said sternly: "I'll cut off the head of anyone that wants her hair cut and her feet unbound." Still this girl with bound feet courageously signed up for the Central Military Academy in 1927 and received strict training according to the drill regulations for foot soldiers. After graduation, she threw herself into the famous Guangzhou Uprising. She spared no effort to shake off the yoke of the feudal society on women and traveled over a great distance to the Soviet Union to learn modern knowledge and modern art. The transformation from feet binding to the performing of modern dances reflected not only Wei Gongzhi's complicated and hard psychological journey but also the leap in centuries of the Chinese women's pursuit for their own independence and emancipation.

In the old society there was the saying that "good men don't go to the gambling house and good women don't enter the theater." A female actress was a synonym for "geisha." Even in performance, it was unorthodox for men and women to play together. In the composition of traditional Chinese operas, the Shaoxing opera troupe was purely female, and the Beijing opera was purely male. The "four famous female character types" were all male. If women had been allowed to perform Beijing opera on the stage, probably there wouldn't have been the famous Mei Lanfang.

The cultured servicewomen in the Red Army ate red rice and drank pumpkin soup, but the art they aspired after could be called "modern." At that time modern drama had just been introduced to China from the West and was termed "civilization show." It was performed mainly to intellectuals and young students in big cities and couldn't be seen by those below county levels. Yet the speed at which Li Bochao, Wei Gongzhi and others popularized and produced modern art in the Red Army could be termed a miracle in the artistic history.

The cite for the Red Armywomen's performance was naturally theatrical and creative. The stage was set up on the spot and the screen was pieced together with sheets. Pine trees were their lighting and one harmonica constituted the whole band. Even the costumes were tailored

by themselves. Lacking makeup paint, they used charcoal instead; without rouge they dipped red paper into water as a substitute. The hard conditions didn't weaken the effect of the troupe's performance. With the start of the program they created, program that reflected army life, people both on and off the stage became one, and sounds of slogans and applause echoed about. When Li Bochao and Wei Gongzhi performed dances brought back from the Soviet Union, Red Army Dance, Navy Dance, Ukrainian Dance, and Against the Wall of Paris by the American dancer Duncan, they made a stir in the whole audience. The army and the people of the Soviet areas who had only heard folk songs and popular tunes and seen street performances and old shows saw for the first time "international art." Such performances became grand occasions in the cultural life of the central Soviet areas.

In the hard times of war, watching the performance of the servicewomen was a treat; the existence of the force of servicewomen was moreover invisible strength to the servicemen who fought bloody battles. What follows is a true and unembellished record of the crossing of snow-covered mountains during the Long March by a woman member of the propaganda team of the Red Army: " Before crossing the snow-covered mountains, we were awakened at 3 in the morning by the company commander and political instructor. The troops were to start at 5. We must get to the important places in advance so as to set up agitation booths. It was early summer, and each of us had only an unlined garment on. With a sparse population there, it was hard to find anything for food, not to say things to keep out the cold like strong drink or ginger. The company commander and the political instructor told us to find a stick each and to take each and to take out everything that could be put on in case of cold. Besides, each of us was given a piece of cloth and was told to wrap up our feet in it and then put on the straw sandals. They found from somewhere some hot peppers and cooked a cauldron of hot pepper soup. After drinking the hot soup, we started off with gongs, drums, and bamboo clappers. At the foot of the mountains, the temperature dropped drastically and the snow on the ground was frozen hard. Sticks touching the ground produced loud sounds of rat-tat. Halfway up the mountains, the wind howled and ice and snow flew violently. We were so frozen that we felt as if cut by knives, and even though we wrapped ourselves in everything available, it was of no avail. The higher we climbed, the thinner the air became, and the harder it was for us to breathe. Those who sat down to take a breather never got up again; and those who stopped to look into the distance were blinded by the shiny snow, and feeling dark before their eyes, fell down to the ground never to get up again. Seeing this, the company commander and the political instructor immediately asked us to take out our gongs and drums to cheer the troops on along the way, reminding

them not to stop, not to look up, and not to sit down, as was required by the army. The army leaders' summing-up and our agitation produced good results. Groups of Red Armymen passed on by us. Close to the top of the mountain, the storm wind became more violent and breathing was even harder. Heavy snow fell like balls of cotton. Not a few people, having exhausted all their strength upon getting here, fell weak in the knees and dropped into the canyon. To encourage the troops, we set up a propaganda station in the draught: 'Come on!

The summit is just ahead!' 'Who is a hero and who is a brave man, let's compete and see on the top of the snow-covered mountain!' Amid the wind and snow, we started singing enthusiastically Anthem of the Young Pioneers: March forward/Dawn is just ahead/Strive, comrades/.... It was hard already to breathe due to lack of oxygen on the high mountains. So when I held back my breath to sing, blood ran out of my nose and I felt ill in the chest as if it were stuffed with cotton. But I still gathered up all my strength and sang: Bravely forward/Steady in steps/Hold high the revolutionary banner.... Seeing us weak and young girls conducting propaganda and agitation in the draught, the Red Army soldiers were all deeply touched. The sick comrades, in particular, seeing us, nodded their heads with feeling and exerted every effort to climb towards the top of the mountain." The recorder is Wang Xinlan, the youngest servicewoman in the Long March who later became head of the radio station of the 115th Division of the Eighth Route Army. Each Red Army soldier who passed beside her during the crossing would surely remember her.

The 25,000-li Long March of the Red Army shook whole China and the whole world. It covered 12 provinces and cities and spread the seeds of the revolution into the hearts of the people. The servicewomen in the Red Army, in particular, attracted worldwide attention. In 1936, Saving the Nation Times of Paris published a news report by journalist Yang Dinghua "From Gansu to Shaanxi," in which he wrote: "What was especially interesting here was the attitude of several peasant women of the Han and Hui nationalities towards the Red Armywomen who were carrying on political work. They judged these soldiers to be women by their words and deeds, but they felt suspicious when they saw their martial attire, linen shoes, puttee, pistols and their valiant looks. Hence several peasant women cordially led a servicewoman to their house. Before long all the servicewomen were led by the local peasant women of the Han and Hui nationalities back to their respective houses. Since they still had some doubt as to the sex of these servicewomen, the peasant women started a 'check' on them. The red Armywomen were confused at first, but then they burst into an uproar. Having made the 'check,' the peasant women became even more cordial, inviting the Red Armywomen to be seated on their kang. Moreover, they served a very



delicious dinner to the women soldiers. I think this is not only due to the closer ties among females but also due to the boundless admiration and reverence the peasant women held for the women soldiers taking part in the Long March."

## II. Cultured Servicewomen and Servicewomen's Culture:

### Servicewomen in the War of Resistance Against Japan (1937-1945)

#### 6. A Military Assembly of Chinese women Intellectuals without Military Mobilization

It was early spring in 1938, and the chill of winter still lingered in the air. In a small inn in Wuchang, a young girl hunched her shoulders over her book blowing into her hands from time to time to keep them warm while casting furtive glances around. She was reading a forbidden book, *Red Star Over China*, which was written by the famous American correspondent E. Snow. Soon, she was completely absorbed by the book, which seemed to her a book about legendary figures. Among them was a familiar name of a woman, Wei Gongzhi. Ms. Wei was also from Nanyang of Henan Province as she was, and both had been students of Beicang Girls' Middle School of Kaifeng City. And what was more, it was her own father who had provided the expenses for Wei to take the entrance examination for a military school in another city. She could recall that the eggs the family used to have for breakfast had suddenly disappeared, and they all had wondered why her father's salary should have been reduced so much. Only later when she grew up did her father tell her about that mysterious risky affair. Now she was following suit after Ms. Wei--going to the front. At the time she was just back from the front line of north China. A short time later, people saw her report *At the Tangyin Battlefield*, carried in the magazine *The Literary Front*, which was directed by Mr. Mao Dun, together with a preface to it written by none other than Mao Dun himself. Gradually she was no longer satisfied by just advocating resistance against the Japanese. Her aspiration was to go to Yan'an and to write in her book about Yan'an, the mysterious revolutionary base, where a real anti-Japanese armed force was calling for her. Later, her wish was fulfilled and she got to Yan'an. Still later, she accompanied the troops commanded by Liu Bocheng and Deng Xiaoping to the Dabieshan Mountains in their triumphant advance. She wrote and wrote as she followed their maneuvers, producing works of altogether more than a million characters. She was Zeng Ke, an outstanding representative of a whole generation of servicewomen during the Anti-Japanese War.

Women of this generation were those who had grown up under the nurture of the May Fourth New Culture Movement. They joined the army, carrying with them their pens, and books produced by the New Culture. Unlike their predecessors, they did fruitful work in the cultural field

during the war, and in the history of China they left an extraordinary legacy of servicewomen's culture.

During the thousands of years of Chinese history, the feudal moral codes for women were embodied in this motto: "Illiteracy is the best virtue for a woman." Thus, most women were denied the right of education. Women's culture, as a reflection of this background, could only be, at its best, the personal emotions and painful groans, involving only family life, expressed and uttered by women who had been brought up in rich and cultured families and had received some amount of family education. Their works were mostly scattered and circulated in private among the people and few gained public respect. The Chinese women's culture originated from the establishment of special schools for women just around the time of the Xinhai Revolution in 1911 and the May Fourth New Culture Movement in 1919. At the time, though there appeared some progressive women's organizations and independent women's newspapers and periodicals, the new culture's voice was feeble and did not attract much attention because Chinese women as a social stratum were not independent and not emancipated. On July 7, 1937, the Lugouqiao Incident took place, which shocked the whole country and the world. This marked the beginning of an all-out aggressive war against China by the Japanese imperialists, and also the beginning of the nation-wide Anti-Japanese War on the part of the Chinese people. A large number of women intellectuals and girl students joined the army and went to the battlefield. They merged their struggle for their own emancipation into that for the liberation of the nation as a whole. The new consciousness of a new women's culture represented by these women found fertile soil in this national liberation war against Japan. This not only injected new blood into the Chinese servicewomen's ranks, but also established a distinctive tie between the formation and development of a new Chinese women's culture and the role of the servicewomen.

This was a military assembly of Chinese women intellectuals without military mobilization.

On Aug. 12, 1937, the 18th Group Army Northwest Battlefield Service Corps of the 18th Army Group was formed by 33 intellectuals, who were then studying in the Anti-Japanese Military and Political college in Yan'an, with Ding Ling, a woman writer, as its director. They went to the anti-Japanese battlefield in northwest China.

On Sept. 14 of the same year, the Hunan Women's Battlefield Service Corps, organized by another woman writer, Xie Bingying, set out for the Shanghai-Songjiang battlefield accompanying the Kuomintang's Fourth Army.

Again in Oct. of the same year, the Shanghai Labour Women's Battlefield Service Corps was sponsored and organized jointly by Ms. He Xiangning, head of China Women's Anti-Japanese Service Association

Shanghai Branch, and the Night School of Young Women's Christian Association. The corps was led by Hu Lanqi, a woman cadet of the Huangpu Military Academy, and they began to put on performances in the war zones for the soldiers.

Other important battlefield service corps composed of women or chiefly of women which were active in China's various battle zones were the New Fourth Army Battlefield Service Corps, the Fifth War Zone War-time Cultural Service Corps, the Second and Third Shanghai Labour Women's Battlefield Service Corps, the Yunnan Women's Battlefield Service Corps, the Shanghai Cultural Community's Battlefield Service Corps, the Sichuan Women's Battlefield Service Corps, the Shanxi Women's Battlefield Service Corps, the Hankou Young Women's Christian Association's Battlefield Service Corps, the Guizhou Women's Battlefield Service Corps, the Beiping Young Women's Battlefield Service Corps, and the Hongkong Women's Battlefield Service Corps. Similar organizations were also set up in such areas as Nanning and Yulin in Guangxi Province to carry out battlefield service and other salvation activities.

These women not only did such work as collecting funds and supplies for the frontline soldiers and taking care of the wounded, but also carried out in their own special manner all sorts of activities that constituted the phenomena of Chinese servicewomen's battlefield culture. The 18th Group Army Battlefield Service Corps, led by Ding Ling, started off from Yan'an, crossed the Yellow River, went through 16 counties and more than 60 villages in Shanxi Province, their itinerary covering three thousand li. Ms. Ding Ling narrated in her book *Head for the Battlefield*: "We marched every day. We set up the stage, held meetings, delivered speeches, put on short plays, sang songs, dismantled the stage and did things I had never done before, all for the service of the soldiers." They reached Xi'an when the Japanese army was bombarding Tongguan and Xi'an itself was threatened. They did propaganda work together with local salvation organizations. They wrote, directed and acted out anti-Japanese plays all by themselves, putting on at least 20 performances a month, sometimes even at the rate of seven performances in three days. They put up anti-Japanese posters, taught anti-Japanese songs, made public speeches and held political classes in order to mobilize the masses for the resistance against the Japanese invaders. They compiled 10 pamphlets in the Battlefield Service series and edited and published several volumes of the informal periodical *Art and Literature of Northwest China*. The Shanghai Service Corps headed by Hu Lanqi worked and moved around in 8 provinces including Gansu, Zhejiang, Anhui, Jiangxi, Hunan, Hubei, Henan and Fujian, traveling as long as over 20,000 li. In times of battles they went up to the frontline to rescue the wounded and clean

up the battlefield, and in the intervals between battles they did propaganda among the soldiers, put on performances, gave cultural lessons and helped keep military discipline. Besides all this, the Hunan Service Corps led by Xie Bingying set forth four disciplinary principles for themselves: 1 Devote yourself whole-heartedly to the struggle for the country and people even at the cost of your life; 2 Work hard even under poor conditions and do solid work instead of paying only lip service and promoting self-interest; 3. Never have love affairs; 4. Share joys, sorrows and dangers with the soldiers. They kept their promises with their own actions. They often had to sleep on the ground without beds, drink water from murky pools, march in the rain on muddy roads, and sometimes they even had not enough to eat for days on end. For the first time they realized the strength of women when they were organized, and this strength inspired them and urged them on.

In the early period of the anti-Japanese War, the primary task the women's anti-Japanese organizations set for themselves was to advocate resistance against the Japanese invaders and awaken the consciousness of the Chinese women. Singing anti-Japanese songs, acting in anti-Japanese plays and speaking in anti-Japanese rallies became essential skills for every member of women's anti-Japanese organizations. The Kaifeng Children's Theatrical Troupe was set up by Wei Gongzhi, a famous Long-March veteran. Its debut on March 8, 1938, in Kaifeng attracted considerable attention from all social circles. Its public performances later in Zhengzhou and Luoyang created a great sensation and received warm applause from the audiences. The Fifth War Zone's Anti-Japanese Youth Regiment had two girl student detachments, each with 150 members. They worked in southeast Henan Province with Huangchuan as their base. They taught anti-Japanese songs like "The Trilogy of a Refugee," performed short plays in the streets like "Put Down Your Whip," "The Three Beautiful Rivers" and "A Fuss Over Nothing." They published informal newspapers, put forth wall papers, and made public speeches in the streets in promoting anti-Japanese propaganda.

The first group of servicewomen in the New Fourth Army were from the Battlefield Service Corps directly attached to the headquarters of the Army. Their number quickly increased from a few dozens at first to more than two hundred. They put on a play entitled Seeing the Husband Off to the Battlefield, telling the story of a country young wife sending her husband to join the anti-Japanese army, and this play brought about an upsurge to support the army among women south of the Yangtze River. Tunes from the play Seeing the Husband Off to the Battlefield could be heard sung by young women everywhere. One girl added a line to the words: "He whom I may accept as my sweetheart must

be a New Fourth Army man. For only he can be trustworthy and always victorious in battle." Another young man added another line: "If you eat the cabbage for your meal, just eat the tender part, and if you want to be a soldier, just join the New Fourth Army.

The songs put forth by the Service Corps soon became popular songs, and the plays put on by the service corps were frequently copied and widely appreciated. Wherever they went there were moving scenes of the well-off volunteering to contribute money and the able-bodied volunteering to do what they could for the anti-Japanese cause. A generous widow donated 300 dan (stones) of grain as provisions for the army, and following her head a couple, who owned a grain shop, also donated the same amount of grain.

On Feb. 18, 1939, general Xiang Ying, deputy commander of the New Fourth Army, wrote an article, "Our Women Soldiers," in commemoration of the International Working Women's Day (March 8). In the article the general paid tribute to the servicewomen of the New Fourth Army: "They are among the most active fighters who worked and fought before and behind the enemy, north and south of the great Yangtse River. They have become advocators and organizers of a mass movement against Japanese invasion, and part of the New Fourth Army's fighting forces. They are an indispensable force in winning battles."

During the war, the Japanese invaders perpetrated extremely terrible crimes against the Chinese people, committing arson, killing, looting and raping, and Chinese women, in particular, bore the brunt of the Japanese atrocities. In the notorious Nanjing Massacre, which shocked the whole world, there were about 20,000 rapings in just one city, Nanjing. In "the Verdict of the Far-East International Military Tribunal," such facts were recorded: "Most women in the city were raped, from small girls to old women. Among such rapings were a considerable number of instances of algolagnia: the bodies of many raped women were cut into pieces." Many Chinese women came to the bitter realization that their fate was tied entirely with that of their nation: they would live if the country rose up and fought against Japan, and they would be doomed if the country did not do so. therefore, independent anti-Japanese military forces, made up solely of women, were established.

Early in the Anti-Japanese War, there were two quite influential women's military organizations: the Girl Students' Detachment of Guangxi Province and the Shaoxing Women's Battalion of Zhejiang Province. Set up in Sept. 1937, the Girl Students' Detachment of Guangxi was made up of 130 members. From the very beginning they drew the attention of the whole nation by publishing the document "A Call on All Our Fellow Countrywomen": "The fire of fury against Japan is spreading to every corner of China! Rise up from under the thousands

of yokes! Rise up from within the millions of shackles! Let's defend our motherland, fellow countrywomen! Let's defend the peace of the whole world!" "Can we bear to see the miseries of our countrymen as slaves to a foreign power? No. We will live and live a decent life. We would rather die fighting in the battlefield than be raped and slaughtered by the enemy with our hands folded." "Rise up, dear sisters. Hesitate no more, lament no more and nor can we resign our fate to superstition. Hesitation, lamentation and superstition is only a road to doom.... Rise up, ardent sisters! Pluck up your courage and come out of the kitchen, leave the home, and march onto the great road of national salvation. Let's square our national account of blood with the enemy!" Their work and struggles were extensively reported and covered by many newspapers and periodicals, such as The Semiweekly of Resistance Against Japan, Life of Women, and Women of Zhejiang.

The Women's Battalion of Shaoxing in Zhejiang Province was organized in May, 1938, a military force composed of women, which operated along the Qiantang River. There were 45 members of them, divided into three groups: the propaganda detachment, the field firstaid detachment and the fighting detachment. In Nov. of the same year, the Women's Battalion took part, together with the Youth Battalion, in a night attack on a Japanese squad stationed in Wangdian. A few days later, "A Night Attack on Wangdian by the Women's Battalion" and other two news reports were published in the journal Battle Flag of Shaoxing. This attracted the attention of progressive circles at home and abroad, and made a great social impact. The Women's Battalion penetrated into Haining County to intercept the renegade county magistrate, set fire to the office of the newspaper Regeneration Daily owned by renegade elements, raided the enemy public relations squad and the renegade county offices, and carried out other similar operations. In March, 1939, the Women's Battalion received an inspection by Zhou Enlai, then the deputy director of the Political Department of the Military Committee of the National Government. In May, in an interview published in the salvation Daily, Zhou said: "What excited me most was the battles fought by the Women's Battalion. In the Eighth Route and New Fourth Armies there had been instances before in which groups of women, in three's or five's, killed a few enemy soldiers, but the Women's Battalion was the first to fight battles in force behind the enemy's frontlines."

## 7. From a Delicate Young Lady to a Battle-Hardened Warrior

Among the women intellectuals who assembled to take part in the resistance against Japan, there were a fairly large number of young girls from cultured upper-class families. They exerted a considerable

influence among their ranks with their distinct rebellious spirit and their cultural accomplishments.

By the 1930s, China had changed to such an extent that girls from upper-class families could receive education and they were no longer bothered by such traditional bad practices as child brides and bound feet. But the common practice of looking up to men and down on women still prevailed.

Among the offspring of Lin Zexu, the famous national hero, there was a girl, who felt greatly constrained because she was small and frail, and often ignored and left in the cold by her mother. Every other child in the family had a talisman in the Buddhist temple, but she was the only exception. Once when she was 8, a niece of hers asked her in solicitude, "Tell me, how much rice do you usually eat for your meal?" To such a simple question she was so much overwhelmed that she did not know how to answer it. It was not that she was unable to express herself, but that she did not know what would be the expected answer by her mother which would not make her angry. Dropping murmur "I don't know," she ran away, with tears in her eyes. In her small heart there was already the glow of rebellion against such injustice. Eventually she grew up and went to school. She saw more of the world and found that almost in China's every so-called "cultured family," there was a girl who would serve as a vent to others' anger, not to speak of the girls in poorer families, whose fate was presumably more miserable. Later on, she passed the entrance examination and was admitted to Yanjing University, joined the Chinese Communist Party, directed a book-reading and discussion group, and took an active part in anti-Japanese activities. The Japanese tried to pursue and arrest her, and she was told by the Party organization that she must change her name. So she assumed a pseudonym, and joined the Eighth Route Army. Her rebellious action set an example for her two brothers and soon they also joined the Eighth Route Army. In the Jin-Cha-Ji Border Region she taught the Chinese language to an intermediate class, serving as "teacher" to many army leaders. Even now, quite a few senior leaders often recall those days when she taught them how to read and write. Later on, she became a part-time editor of the newspaper The People's Own Army while still working as a teacher. And still later she was appointed the first head-master of Rongzhen Primary School, predecessor of the present August First School. She was not aware that just when she secretly joined the underground Party, her twin sister had, ahead of her, joined the New Fourth Army in South China, and became an active war correspondent for Xinhua News Agency. She said, "At the time, I did not really understand the meaning of 'social classes.'" What I deeply felt was the oppression inflicted upon women by society and the oppression upon the Chinese people by the Japanese. My heart was filled



with a desire to rebel and the feeling was very strong. It was a very difficult time in the Anti-Japanese War when in 1942 Comrade Mao Zedong said in Yan'an that we would surely win the final victory. I never thought I could come back to Beijing alive. For, when I went out to join the war, I was determined to give up everything--diploma, social status and so on. What I wanted was to devote the whole of myself to the nation and to the resistance against Japan." What she gave up was not only her own youth, but also her first child.

She didn't want to tell her name. In those years girl students like her were numerous, said she, and the bit she did was her duty, not worth mentioning.

On Oct. 12, 1904, a girl was born to a highly respected big family in Linli County, Hunan Province. Twenty-three years later she wrote the novel *Meng Ke* and the short story diary of Miss Sophie under the pen name Ding Ling. The publication of these works was like a bombshell dropped in the literary community and "everybody was shocked by her genius."

In 1936, this woman writer, already famous in the Chinese literary circles, reached Yan'an after overcoming hardships and difficulties. Mao Zedong asked her in solicitude, "What you like to do, Ding Ling?" Her answer was simple: "To become a Red Armywoman." This woman writer's choice was as novel and shocking as her novels. Mao Zedong said: "Good. Perhaps you are just in time for the last battle. Go to the frontline with the General Political Department under Yang Shangkun." Thus, she began her military career with great enthusiasm.

If a person's life could be said to be a collection of choices, Ding Ling had a better opportunity to choose than an ordinary woman. But what she chose was none other than to be a servicewoman. Let's trace her life's course, a chain of events destined for her.

As a young girl, she had the same bitter experience as the Lin sisters. When she was 12, her brother died. Relatives came to express their condolences. In her presence they said: "A great pity that it was the boy. It would be better if it were Binzhi (Ding Ling's childhoodname)." The words were like a dagger thrust into her small heart. This was the initial stimulus that eventually led her to the writing of numerous works reflecting women's life and fate.

In Ding Ling's works, the name of "Nora", the heroine in the Norwegian playwright Ibsen's famous play, was mentioned more than once. Nora rebelled against the oppression of the family and went out to seek freedom and liberty for women. But where did Nora go? Ibsen didn't give us an answer, creating a dramatic suspense for us to ponder over. In the 1920s, Ding Ling wrote of a *Meng Ke* in despair, a depressed Sophie, and a miserable Wei Hu. Together with these Chinese "Noras," she tried to think things out and struggled with problems. "It was tedious and

depressing just to live quietly and die quietly," she said, "and I was already fed up with it. But actually what was I after? Even I myself could not figure it out. Sophie was aspiring to something she could not quite grasp." Yes, Ding Ling did not stop her exploration for a bright future; she continued to write about poor students, ordinary school teachers, country lasses, girls in love....; she wrote about all those women who did not know where their fate would lead them; she wrote about how these women eventually became prisoners to their life, their fate and their emotions. With the miseries of these women in her heart, she joined the Left-Wing Writers' Association in Shanghai. Scarcely had she joined the revolutionary ranks when she received a personal blow: her husband Hu Yeping, a young poet, together with Rou Shi and 21 other revolutionaries, was killed in Longhua. Having sent her three-month-old baby to her native place in Hunan, she began to edit Beidou (The Big Dipper), a literary journal directly under the Left-Wing Writers' Association. In 1932, Ding Ling joined the Communist Party. In her works, her concerns about the fate of some individuals were elevated to concerns and explorations about the fate of the whole nation. In 1933, when absorbed in her revolutionary work, she was kidnapped by secret agents of the Kuomintang. She was put into prison in Nanjing and for three years she was deprived of her personal freedom. She continued her writing in the prison, and she was always concerned about the fate of China's "Nora" just as she was about her own fate. In 1936, Ding Ling joined the Red Army, and this act was no longer part of a trial in her exploration for her personal future; it was an inevitability in her struggle for freedom and liberty.

With a simple (yet rather grand by local standard) ceremony, Yan'an welcomed this newcomer, who came from afar with single-minded devotion. An evening party was held in a big cave in honor of her. Many leaders came, including Mao Zedong and Zhou Enlai. Ding Ling told of this event later: "That was the most glorious and happiest day for me in the whole of my life. I was so care-free and so happy, and it was the first time I spoke before so many leaders. I spoke of my experience in Nanjing at length as if I were a homecoming child telling daddy and mom everything I had gone through." Soon, she went to the front in east Gansu Province. When a blister appeared on her foot, she would try passing a thread, soaked with oil, through it just as other soldiers did, and the next day she could march in line with others without trouble. When the troops stopped for the night and she was forgotten, she would pass the night in the stable or in the kitchen, listening to the horses munching away all night or watching cooks preparing meals in the middle of the night. In 1937, Ding Ling accompanied Smedley, an American journalist, back to Yan'an from the front. Mao Zedong again asked her: "What else would you like to do?" Her reply was: "Again,

to be a Red Armywoman." Then she was assigned to the Central Guards Regiment as deputy director of the political department. She was not quite clear about the scope of her responsibilities. She went to the soldiers' recreation room, referred to as "the Salvation Room." "Can you play the mouth organ?" the soldiers asked her. She shook her head, but she did not feel awkward or ashamed, for she was becoming one of them and familiarizing herself with a life completely new to her. The War of Resistance Against Japan broke out, and she led the Battlefield Service Corps of the 18th Group Army to the front line. From then on, she began to consider herself a "real soldier." All the top commanders of the Eighth Route Army were fond of talking with this woman writer who had come from a big city. Commander in chief Zhu De unrolled the map and explained to her the general situation of the war, while Comrade Zuo Quan liked to spin war yarns with much embellishment. General Yang Dezhi, commander of the 115th Division, gave her as a present a Japanese army woolen overcoat seized from the battle. In those days when she worked in the Northwestern China Battlefield Service Corps, she always wore this overcoat which was designed for men and too long for her. She said wearing a Japanese army overcoat was the most vivid way to tell the people what the Eighth Route Army was doing--fighting the Japanese. As she went from one battlefield to another, she put on performances, delivered speeches, and wrote articles and reports. Today, we can no longer hear her give public speeches or watch her act out the anti-Japanese plays written by herself. But when we read the articles she wrote, we can still share with her the recollections of those difficult yet memorable days. She had thoroughly fused herself into that fighting body and she wrote with enthusiasm and sympathy about the soldiers and their life on the battlefield. She not only attracted the attention of the whole Eighth Route Army for her work, but also became a person put under special surveillance by the Japanese. She had stepped onto the anti-Japanese arena armed with a pen wielded only by women and fighting in a manner special to women. Mao Zedong once praised her in a poem, "A delicate young lady of yesterday, a battle-hardened warrior of today."

The Chinese "Noras," having abandoned their homes and left behind the cities and towns that were familiar to them, came to the arid mountainous areas of China and joined the forces for national liberation. Yet, it was not a paradise here. Even a revolutionary might retain some feudal traces in him. Ding Ling did not neglect the cleaning of those traces among her own ranks with her sharp anti-feudal pen. Her sympathy never ignored the women around her, and she was pained by the prejudices and practices against women prevailing in her own anti-Japanese ranks. Just before the International Working Women's Day (March 8) in 1942, she spent a whole night and wrote an essay,

"Reflections on the March Eighth Women's Day," in which she put forward ideas she had long pondered over in her mind. She wrote, in grave earnestness, "I, myself, am a woman, and I know better than anyone else the weaknesses of women. But better still I know their sufferings. They are not ahead of the times, they are not perfect, and they are not made of iron. They can not be expected to be above all social temptations and to resist all social oppressions. Each of them has a history of blood and tears. All of them have had noble emotions (no matter whether they are eventually successful or have failed, or whether they have been lucky or misfortune-stricken, or whether they are still engaged in a desperate struggle or have given themselves up to vulgarity). This is especially true of the women who have come to Yan'an. That's why I look upon all those women with great sympathy who have fallen and become criminals. I hope that men, especially those in high positions, as well as women themselves, should view the errors of these women as connected with the social conditions. Philosophize less and pay more attention to practical problems, so that theory is not divorced from practice. I hope every communist will be more responsible for his own moral character."

The revolutionary struggles for national democracy refined and sublimated her theory on women's emancipation, and she eventually found the proper destination for China's "Noras." She announced: "There are no people in the world who are so incompetent as not to be qualified to seek their own rights. So, if women are to gain their equality, they must improve themselves first." How to improve themselves? For the first time Ding Ling put forward the psychological and cultural requirements for Chinese women besides the requirement of being physically strong. This was not a remark just at the spur of the moment; it was a conclusion reached from her own experience of blood and tears. "Secondly, you must make yourself happy. Only when there is happiness, is there youth and vitality; only when there is happiness, can you feel the richness of life, be able to bear hardships and enjoy life, and have a bright future. This happiness is not to be satisfied with the present, but to fight and keep forging ahead.... Thirdly, you must use your brain. You'd better make it your usual practice, and correct the habit of not thinking for yourself but just drifting with the current, ... so that you will not be taken in, fooled by seemingly sweet things, and tempted by small favours, and that you will not waste your enthusiasm and your life, and thus eliminate your worries. Fourthly, you must be prepared to bear hardships and hold out. As a modern woman of consciousness, you must be determined to sacrifice all the rosy illusions. Happiness means forging ahead in tempests and storms, rather than playing music in the moonlight or reading poems aloud in the flower garden. If you have not firmly made up your mind,

you will certainly drop out. Not bearing hardships means sinking and degenerating. And the will to hold out has to be strengthened in 'persistence.' A person without high aspirations can hardly have the will power strong enough to refrain from petty advantages and cheap comfort. And only those can have such high aspirations who really work for mankind but not for themselves." The publication of this article made a great impact in the anti-Japanese base areas. Yet what was brought upon this servicewoman misunderstanding and unfair criticism more than anything else.

Gold can never be devalued by the dust that covers it. As one of the best essays on women affairs as yet, this article still shines with the brightness of an unyielding life.

Standing in China at the end of the 20th century, we still have to repeat the same question once raised by Ding Ling: When will be the time at which the word "women" doesn't draw special attention and is not worth a special mention?

#### 8. Performance of a Malaysian Country Dance on the Loess Plateau of Yan'an

From the 70's of the present century when China adopted policies of opening to the outside world, Chinese girls of yellow complexion could be seen everywhere in the world. Going abroad has become the fashion for Chinese girls.

Yet in the ranks of Chinese servicewomen during the War of Resistance Against Japan, there was a number of overseas Chinese compatriots.

Liao Bing's first impression of Yan'an was rather disappointing to her. All the hardships and travel fatigue involved in drifting on the sea for days from Singapore to Hongkong and then from Hongkong to Xi'an via Guangzhou she could put up with. After all it wasn't an easy thing to fight with the Japanese devils. Throughout the journey it kept raining. When Liao and her classmates reached their destination--the branch campus of Yan'an North-Shaan'xi Public School, their dresses were so covered with mud that it was impossible to make out the colours. They expected to take a refreshing bath upon arriving at the school. While the male students were assigned to a village, Liao and several other women students were assigned to Group 37 of the Third Sub-Unit (the Group of Women Students). When their guide said: "Here we are," Liao discovered that the place was also a village. Only it had a nice name--Flower Palace Village. She looked all around: Where could the school be? There were no classrooms, no auditoriums, and no desks, chairs or benches. Of course, there were no flowers, either. All her mental preparations for hardships before she parted from home appeared

to be rather feeble as compared with the reality. What was most unbearable to her was lack of water. Though she was covered all over with mud, there was no place where she could take a bath. She would take two baths each day when she was in Singapore. Now, however, the 10-people squad had to share one basin of water to wash their faces each morning. The steamed buns and cooked millet were covered with flies....She held a steamed bun in her hand, yet she dared not take a bite, nor could she swallow. In the evening, lying on the bed with her body covered with dirt, she simply couldn't fall asleep. She could never forget that day--July 23, 1938.

Her classmates doubted whether this "Miss Malaysia" could hold on.

That Liao Bing had selected Yan'an wasn't accidental. The mission she shouldered was twofold. The Japanese invaders' aggression against China evoked a common hatred for the enemy among the overseas Chinese. Liao Bing was director of the Women's Society of the Malay Culture Association in Singapore. Their goal was to seek survival for the nation and emancipation for women. On March 8, 1937, the supplement to China Morning Post of Singapore devoted a full page to Liao Bing's autobiographical prose "She Regenerated," which narrated her experience of frustrations in breaking off her child bride engagement and seeking the freedom of life. On March 8, 1938, as chairwoman of the Yibao Meeting in Commemoration of the International working Women's Day held in Singapore, Liao Bing put forward the call for bringing into play women's role and mobilizing them so as to fight against Japan and strive for national independence and liberation. Her call was warmly welcomed by women from all walks of life. When she raised the plan of returning back home to Yan'an to fight against the Japanese, she got a warm response from the Yibao Women's Mutual Aid Society, staff members of the China Morning Post, printing workers, and primary and middle school teachers. They raised funds and prepared luggage for this young woman. Before she left, her third elder brother gave her these words of encouragement: "Take hold of the reality and understand life at the point of the bayonet." Her friends filled her autograph album with poetic lines written in Chinese or English. Liao Bing felt that what she shouldered was not just personal deep feeling for the motherland but also the sincere heart of the overseas Chinese for the country. Upon entering Guangzhou from Hongkong, she didn't stop to see her aged parents; rather she embarked upon the train for the North at the risk of air bombardment by the Japanese invaders. With war going on, the train now moved, now stopped crawling like ants. Liao Bing perceived a motherland covered all over with wounds and scars and fellow countrymen homeless and wandering from place to place. Crowded among the troops going up to the North, she had only one thing in mind: to carry on the War of Resistance Against Japan to the end even at the

sacrifice of her life.

The Women's Group's meeting to welcome the new classmates was held not in an auditorium but on the folks' sunning ground, upon which the students were seated. Liao Bing, who had been studying in Singapore from childhood on, found this hard to adapt to, too. This was the first time that she sat cross-legged on the ground! But she was soon attracted by the novel, vigorous, and lively spectacle. The sound of singing rang out continuously and the rooters were extremely lively. She had never experienced this before. Suddenly, attention was turned to her: "Let's invite our classmate from Malaysia to sing a Malaysian song and dance a Malaysian dance!" "Come on!" "Come on!" . . . . Mentally unprepared and totally at a loss what to do, Liao Bing felt red in the face and nervous in the mind. Having a strong character from childhood on, she couldn't be forced to do anything which she wouldn't do. Yet the rooters at the meeting were still shouting to her enthusiastically. This was a kind of enthusiasm which she found it hard to, nay, simply couldn't turn down. Eventually her heart was melted. Amidst the waves of enthusiasm, she sang a song titled Good-bye to Malaysia. This was a song that expressed the determination of the overseas Chinese to return back to their motherland to take part in the war. The comrades-in-arms on the ground applauded and cheered for her to the tune of the song. Then she danced a Malaysian country dance. She found that her classmates were all very enthusiastic. Like her, they were in the prime of their life and were burning with righteous indignation against the Japanese invaders. Here their hearts and hers beat as one. This was a kind of circumstance she couldn't find in Malaysia. Liao Bing wrote to her friends in Malaysia about the stirring scene. Later she learned that they had her letter published in a progressive Yibao newspaper as a dispatch from north Shaanxi. The overseas Chinese students in the school also set up a sodality, with Zhang Guojian, a returned overseas Chinese from Indonesia, being the director. He had participated in the Long March and was now director of the Political Department of the branch campus. He delivered lectures on guerrilla warfare to the Women's Group and all the students respected and loved him. The associate director was Comrade Zhu Shoulin, an overseas Chinese from Thailand. Liao Bing was selected secretary-general. There were close to a hundred overseas Chinese students. Their school courses included: national united front, issues of the Chinese revolution, guerrilla warfare, mass movement and military training. Many of them went from here straight towards the anti-Japanese front.

According to statistics, there were as many as 3,000 young intellectuals who came back from overseas to fight with the Japanese.

Large numbers of young women stepped outside their families and entered society. At the same time when they sought after national

liberation, they were looking for their own new place in life. As the old women-suppressing system posed constant threats to them, they needed an organization and an opportunity to create and develop their own culture. New values were constantly clashing with old ones. Even women who had received intermediate or high education must go through the process of knowing society and themselves anew. Not a few of them, unable to stand the rigorous trials of war, went back to their original starting-place. Liao Bing tried to dissuade them from going and deplored their act.

July 20, 1939 was a memorable date in the history of the Chinese women's movement. It was also a date that still remains fresh in Liao Bing's memory. On that day, the Chinese Women's University, initiated by Comrade Mao Zedong, was founded. Liao Bing was recommended to be a student of a senior class of the university. The gate of the Women's University was shrouded in an atmosphere of anti-Japanese national united front. Apart from a portrait of the deceased Mr. Sun Yat-sen, there were portraits of the leaders of the Kuomintang and the Shaanxi-Gansu-Ningxia border region. The portraits of domestic and foreign leaders of women's movements--Zetkin, Krupskaya, Dololes, Song Qingling, He Xiangning, Cai Chang, Deng Yingchao, and Kang Keqing were put up together with that of the revolutionary mother old Mrs. Xia, martyr Zhao Shiyan's mother-in-law, which was especially attractive. At the opening ceremony of the university, Comrade Mao Zedong, standing at the rostrum covered with wild flowers, delivered an important speech: "The Women's University will not only have to train large numbers of theoretically armed women cadres, but also have to train large numbers of cadres of the women's movement who will do practical work." His famous prophecy: "The day women throughout the country rise up will be the time of victory of the Chinese revolution" was verified by the revolutionary practice years later.

The line-up of the Chinese Women's University was noteworthy. Wang Ming, director of the Central United Front and concurrently secretary of the Central Women's Commission, served as president of the university. Ke Qingshi, deputy director of the Central United Front served as vice-president. Zhang Qiuqin, commander of the Women's Division in the Red Army, served as dean of studies. The university offered such obligatory courses as Marxism and Leninism, political economics, philosophy, issues of the Chinese revolution, theories of the women's movement, military education, and general medical and hygienic knowledge. It also offered such elective courses of vocational-technical training as accounting, sewing, news-writing, foreign languages, education, drama, and stenography. The university's General Regulation of Enrolment was distributed to all the anti-Japanese bases of the country as well as areas controlled by



the Kuomintang. Many young women, introduced by offices of the Eighth Route Army, the underground Party organizations, and the united fronts, came to the university after crossing the enemy-occupied areas and going through various risks. Some even laid down their lives as a result. By Aug. 1941, the university had developed into 13 classes, with over 1,000 people.

What Liao Bing cannot forget is that a day after Mr. Chen Jiageng, leader of the overseas Chinese, got to Yan'an for a visit, he came to the Chinese Women's University. Being classmates with the daughter of Li Tiemin, Mr. Chen's secretary, Liao Bing was introduced to Chen Jiageng. The latter inquired in detail this female member of the Eighth Route Army from overseas about her life in Yan'an and all that she had heard and seen. He also held a humorous and lively talk with the other 20 or so women students from overseas. Gazing at the tract upon tract of barren mountains and hills and the lined-up students, he asked: "Do you live such a kind of life of common soldiers year in and year out?" The servicewomen answered: "If we don't drill so, we won't be able to defeat the Japanese devils!" Mr. Chen said at a low voice to Liao Bing and some others: "I'm afraid that you have been so used to the life of young ladies in Malaysia that you won't withstand such a place on the loess plateau and barren mountains." The servicewomen from overseas told this elder straightforwardly: "We really felt somewhat unaccustomed upon first coming to Yan'an and had often made a fool of ourselves!" Hearing their innocent and interesting events in the past, Mr. Chen smiled. This was a group of "Misses Malaysia" he had never before seen. Their overseas background was familiar to him, and yet their life of being soldiers was strange to him. Meeting and knowing them increased his understanding of and sympathy for the Communist Party, the Eighth Route Army and the New Fourth Army and dispelled various doubts in his mind. This not only tilted the balance of his huge investments towards Yan'an; moreover, the servicewomen from overseas became beautiful images in the recollections of his later years.

In Yan'an, apart from the Women's University, there were the North Shaanxi Public School where Liao Bing first studied, the famous Anti-Japanese Military and Political College, Marxist-Leninist College, the Central Party School, and the Lu Xun Art Institute. All its institutions of higher learning were open to women. There were also women students from overseas in the women's group of the head training unit directly under the army headquarters of the New Fourth Army in the South of the Yangtse River.

The establishment of the Women's University not only prepared talents for a higher-level development of the women's movement but also laid the foundation for the development of the forces of Chinese

servicewomen and of female culture. Liao Bing and 3 other women students became journalists of the New China Post in Yan'an (predecessor of Liberation Daily). Later they fought from one place to another until they got to the anti-Japanese front in northwest Shanxi and took part in the establishment and development of Jin-Sui Daily and South-Shanxi Daily.

Like Liao Bing, all the other anti-Japanese servicewomen regarded Yan'an as a place where they were reborn. Over 50 years have passed, but Yan'an, whenever they think of it, is still so dear and familiar to them. Hao Zhiping, who gave up her studies in a women's normal college to fight with the Japanese, traveled a long distance to Yan'an at the risk of her life. She had planned to go back and study in her home town Kaifeng after overthrowing the Japanese devils, but the moment she stepped on the land of Yan'an, all her thoughts of returning home were gone. She said: "I was assigned to the 18th Group of the Chinese People's Anti-Japanese Military and Political College and started a new life. That evening, lying on the newly-built kang, I felt damp and sticky beneath me. Rising up and turning over the straw mattress, I found that the mud which hadn't dried all melted. Just then the blisters and chilblains in my feet also began to trouble me. Aching and itching in the feet, I tossed about and couldn't fall asleep. Suddenly I thought of my mother. After all I was only 15. Unknowingly tears came out. I asked myself then: 'Didn't you want to find the Communist Party? Now that you have found it, why do you begin to miss home? What a good-for-nothing!' Early the next morning, as soon as the reveille sounded, I got up and started to pack up my things. Then I jumped out from the kang and were ready to run outside. But the moment my frost-bitten feet touched the floor, the pain pierced me to the heart, making me unable to run even if I wanted to. Seeing me walking with difficulty, the squad leader said sympathetically: 'Little devil, you're so young and your feet hurt so. Don't force yourself to run if you cannot. Go out to drill when you've recovered from your hurt.' These words made me feel strong, however. Straightening my back and standing at attention, I reported: 'Squad leader, my feet don't hurt much, and I'll feel better after some running. Watch me if you don't believe.' Feigning ease, I ran out towards the ranks in big strides. Each day, despite my limp, I went out to drill, carried food and firewood, feeling an inexhaustible strength in myself. Then political studies brought me to a new realm. Luo Mai, Chen Fangwu, Luo Pu, Ai Siqi and some other comrades lectured to us about Marxist-Leninist theories, the history of social development, and workers' movements, all of which we had never been exposed to in our former schools. They broadened my horizon and transformed my former sentiments of detesting the world and its ways into a strong wish to rescue society. Opening a piece of paper,

I wrote deliberately an application for admission to the Party. Immediately afterwards, I changed my name from the traditional and humble 'Binru' to 'Zhiping,' which means 'make peaceful.' It was here that I made the most important choice in my life, which made it possible for me to be still a servicewoman today."

Many of the servicewomen who graduated from the colleges have become leading cadres taking charge of a department or locality. But in their recollections they seldom mention female education or cultural activities in the colleges. Why is it so? First of all it is because they think it goes without saying that female emancipation and national liberation were consistent and joining the revolutionary ranks itself became the first mark of female emancipation. Liao Bing did have the opportunity and had actually been assigned by the leaders to conduct overseas Chinese affairs, but she didn't do it. She said that at that time revolutionary women should go and work in the forefront, whereas conducting overseas Chinese affairs was to her second-front work. Hao Zhiping said even more directly: "Later I followed the Anti-Japanese Military and Political College into the enemy's rear areas and changed my name to 'Red Madder'. This is the name of a plant which is red from the root to the leaves. I wished myself to be red all over and full of vitality, like the red madder." She did as she said, fighting together with her husband Luo Ruiqing in the general headquarters of the eighth Route Army, the anti-Japanese front, throughout the War of Resistance Against Japan. Besides, doing what men did and smashing the barrier of feudal relationships between men and women were also what the revolutionary women of that time sought after, while their sex they simply ignored in this pursuit of theirs.

## 9. Emergence of Cultured Servicewomen Celebrities and Works Depicting Women's Sense of Independence

If we count up the number of veteran women writers, women journalists, and women literary and art workers of the present age, can see that close to half of them were servicewomen during the War of Resistance Against Japan.

Out of the soil of war and national liberation grew up a large number of outstanding cultured celebrities among the servicewomen. The then famous young woman writer Ding Ling, after her diary of Miss Sophie, wrote "Reflections on the March Eighth Women's Day", Head for the Front, and a number of other excellent essays, reports, and novels. Luo Qiong, a young woman, became editorial director of the supplement "Chinese Women" to Liberation Daily. In both the head office and all the branch offices of Xinhua News Agency there were Young women journalists who, following the troops, covered hostilities and news in each of the war

zones and anti-Japanese bases. Some of them even became directors of the branch offices. After Poetess Mo Ye's Ode to Yan'an was set to music, it spread far and wide in the anti-Japanese bases and Kuomintang-controlled areas. These works by women fully reflected the Chinese women's subject consciousness for independence and political stand of resisting the feudal patriarchal system's oppression of women. The awakened Chinese women began to view themselves, the family, the surroundings, the society and the world with their own eyes.

The formation and development of servicewomen's culture was not only a numerical collective accumulation in the form of groups but was also a concentrated representation of the female sense of independence which was full of militancy.

Luo Qiong, selected by the New Fourth Army as a deputy to the 7th National Congress of the CPC, arrived in Yan'an. In the Chinese Women's University she made a report on New fourth Army Servicewomen Dashing about in Battlefields in the South of the Yangtse River. She also compiled A Course in Women's Emancipation on the basis of her theoretical accumulation of many years and her experience and understanding in doing work on women. From a sociological viewpoint she analyzed the formation and evolution of women's social status, pointing out: "In each stage in the development of mankind, women's status in society and family varied with the change of social systems. Oppression of women and inequality between men and women didn't exist from time immemorial." "On the surface, oppression of women seems to result from their control by men, but in essence it results from oppression by the class system of exploitation. The exploited women slaves, women peasants, and women workers, put at the bottom of society, suffer double oppression. Women of the slave-owner class, the feudal landlord class and the capitalist class, being members of their respective classes, have a hand in the exploitation and oppression as noble ladies and share the wealth created by the labourers' blood and sweat; at the same time, subservient themselves to their respective fathers, husbands and sons, they become their subordinates." Luo Qiong pointed out that realization of women's emancipation depended both upon women's own struggle so as to achieve class liberation and upon the extinction of the whole class society so as to achieve equality between men and women in the final sense of the word. Liberation Daily's supplement "Chinese Women," the publication of which she supervised, advocated women's economic independence and called on women to enter society to take part in production and the Anti-Japanese War and to resist the advocacy of merely being "a good wife and a kind mother, a good husband and a kind father" by the Kuomintang reactionaries. Comrade Mao Zedong's famous inscription "Go deep into the realities of life and don't indulge in empty talk" was written in 1942 at the

invitation of the supplement "Chinese Women."

The servicewomen were both participants of the war and its recorders. As a result their literary productions not only had strong female characteristics but also sent forth a strong period feel and social consciousness. Serviceman Yang Mo, who joined the revolutionary ranks in 1936, went, after the breakout of the War of Resistance Against Japan, to the newspaper office of the Political Department of the Tenth Sub-Unit of the Eighth Route Army in central Hebei and became an editor there. Later she transferred to Jin-Cha-Ji Daily, conducting propaganda on and reporting news of the War of Resistance Against Japan. Song of Youth, an autobiographical novel she wrote in accordance with her own experience, made a great stir among the Chinese readers. It told of the story of a young girl by the name of Lin Daojing who forsook her feudal family and joined the revolutionary ranks. Lin became the model of youth to many young girls. The novel was then adapted into a film, which became known to every household in China. In a great sense, the book told women that to liberate themselves they must first of all smash the feudal society that fettered women. Otherwise, even if they shook off the yoke of the family, they would fall into the abyss of the feudal society. The novel was not only the struggle chapter of the spiritual awakening of a depressed girl student but also the literary representation of the psychological journey and tragic experience of a generation of anti-Japanese servicewomen transforming from girl students into women soldiers. Servicewoman Zeng Ke played an active role in the Art Troupe of the fifth war zone in 1938. Many of her field reports, short stories and stage plays were published in Hongkong's Literary Front, the publication of which was supervised by Mr. Mao Dun, and progressive publications like Free China and Literary Monthly. Later they were compiled into reportage collections At Tangyin Battlefield and In Fightings. During the War of Liberation, following the Second Field Army as a journalist of Xinhua News Agency, she took part in the Huai-Hai Campaign, the Yangtse River-Crossing Campaign, the Marching into the Southwest Campaign and some others. Her Head for the Front and Pressing onward into Dabieshan Mountains were true records of these campaigns. She said: "Tempered by war and educated by the martyrs who laid down their lives for the revolution and the selfless, courageous, resourceful and heroic officers and men, I did various kinds of work I was capable of in companies or at battlefield: doing rescue work at battlefield, passing on messages, mobilizing people in carrying stretchers and constructing defense works, reading and writing letters from and to home for soldiers, drafting bulletins, announcing meritorious services and summarizing material of operational experience. At critical moments, the officers and men, forgetting that I was a servicewomen, snuggled up together with me in

one color gateway. Fearing that shell fragments might fall on me, they hid me with their own bodies and even carried me on the back across waist-deep rivers. I seized every minute that could be made use of during marches, operations and rest, collected material, and put down two to three hundred thousand words in the form of news, news dispatch, diary, and reportage." She said: "These were the most important and most valuable years in my life. It was also the most substantial period in my creative practice."

Poetess Mo Ye arrived in Yan'an with the Shanghai National Salvation Performing Team. She recalled: "At that time, I was only 19. Yan'an was the rich soil that fostered my optimistic character. It was a hotbed for cultivating the revolutionary optimism. I wanted to jump when I walked and to sing when I opened my mouth. We kept singing all the time, with one song accompanied by another and another leading to still another. Songs were like the air and sunshine in life. without them, life would be suffocating. I learned various new songs and sang many anti-Japanese songs. when had I sung so many songs in my life before? Yoke of the feudal family, oppression by the dark society, aggression of the imperialists, and persecution by the Kuomintang reactionary government had presented me with a hazy sky and a gloomy future. Though I could also sing then, the songs I sang were sad songs, angry songs, and rebellious songs. The songs I sang when traveling from Shanghai to Yan'an were songs of national salvation. but once in Yan'an, I became so open and happy in my mind, so cheerful in my laughter and so magnanimous in my songs. The song Happy People, popular during the Russian War of National Defense--'Songs of joy bounce with songs and happy people are in high spirits... '--was a song I constantly sang. It reflected the frames of mind not only of mine but also of almost all the youth in Yan'an. Though each of them had a different background, they had all got to the sacred place of the revolution after overcoming difficulties and setbacks and after transcending depression and hesitation. Life in Yan'an was a turning point in our whole life. Whenever I thought of this, I wished to sing an ode to Yan'an with my heart and with passion." Hence the song Ode to Yan'an which spread throughout the war zones and circulates even today. Servicewomen's culture was characterized not only by the portrayal and narration of the field life at that time, which broke free from the domestic female culture of narrow-minded women's petty feelings that had prevailed for several thousand years. What was more important and also the cause of its being a sign of an independent culture was that both in form and content it became a comprehensive representation of Chinese servicewomen's souls and lives.

From a cultural sense, servicewomen became many Chinese women's criterion for cultivating their moral character and improving

themselves. The former also became the pillar of the latter's spiritual youth. In her *Diary of A Woman Soldier*, Xie Bingying wrote: "Our life cannot be more joyful. Though we have to go out to drill every day both in the hard-snowing winter and the scorchingly hot summer, living the same kind of life as that of the common soldiers, none of us complains." She really enjoyed life of this kind: "We have to cover a distance of at least eighty to ninety li each day on average, and sometimes in the evenings we have to sleep on a door plank or a pile of rice straw." She said: "In this great era, I forget that I'm a woman and never think of personal affairs. I only wish to dedicate my life to the revolution. In order to overthrow the warlords and relieve the masses of the people in the whole country of their sufferings, I only wish to run to the battlefield to shed blood. I'll never shed tears or sigh any more for the sake of any personal affairs of marriage." *Diary of A Woman Soldier* was first put by Mr. Lin Yutang into English and then was published respectively in French, Russian and Japanese, etc. Even Romain Rolland, a well-known French writer, sent her a letter, expressing respect and congratulations. In 1937, the boom of guns of resisting Japanese aggression drove her from the hospital bed to the front. Her mother had just died and her father was seriously ill, but despite the emotional trauma and the urge of the kinsfolk for her to stay, Xie Bingying immediately aroused women to the front so as to render service to the wounded. This was one of the most joyful experiences in her life. Amidst the beacon-fire of the War of Resistance Against Japan, Xie Bingying traveled over many places--the east and west of the Grand Canal, the south and north of the Yangtse River, and the Yellow River valley. In Hankou she delivered a speech "Back from the Front"; in Chongqing she edited the supplement *Blood Waves to New People's Newspaper*; in Xi'an she supervised the publication of *Yellow River*; and published such works as *Touring five War Zones*, *New diary of A Woman Soldier*, *At the Battlefield*, *Soldiers' Hands*, *Sister*, *Maiden Meizi*, *A Letter to Young Writers*, *Literary Collections of Resisting Japanese Aggression*, *In a Japanese Prison*, and *Autobiography of a Servicewoman*. Even in her later years, Xie Bingying is concerned about writing a sequel to *Autobiography of a Servicewoman* and is called "a forever young servicewoman."

Han Zi, a servicewoman during the War of Resistance Against Japan, was even more a woman who had her servicewoman's career melt into her soul. In the 50's of the present century, she hurried to the front of the War to Resist U.S. Aggression and Aid Korea in the capacity of a writer and fought for over 40 days and nights in the famous Shangganling tunnel. Her works *The Front* and *The Pearls of Memory* recorded extensively what she saw and heard and how she lived in the armed forces. This servicewoman complex was not only and inexhaustible source of

creation to her but was also a sum of spiritual wealth that pulled her through the difficult years. In her prose *Wanniu and Me*, there was an unusual account: "1959, I was denounced for 5 days and nights on end because of an unwarranted charge of Right deviation. In the darkness before dawn I was often accompanied by my beloved little Wanniu (a girl rescued by the New Fourth Army). The denunciation was brought to a temporary close 5 days before the National Day I was bent upon casting aside my 'self-criticism' and setting to the writing of *Wanniu*. It was no ordinary writing. I turned my tears into ink and pored them down on paper. The sentences expressing my feelings gushed out as a spring. What I put down was my faith, my loyalty, as if a bare-footed girl, despite all the setbacks, were trying to catch up with her own troops and the Party wouldn't, nay, couldn't forsake such a daughter. Correcting while writing, I finished drafting and improving on the 9,000-word story by the evening of the next day. Then I felt as fresh and happy as if I had been washed in a mountain stream of Yunling." Han Zi, now over seventy years of age, suffers from cerebral thrombosis and has had two strokes, "I walk with faltering steps and am forced to rely on a walking stick. But I'll try my best to put aside the stick and regain my former graceful bearing through exercises." She refuses to give in to old age, for she is a servicewoman. She said: "Even if I cannot get rid of the walking stick, I'll show my special field charm, the charm of a servicewoman that cannot be underestimated."



### III." Doves of Peace" amid the Smoke of Gunpowder:

Servicewomen in the War of Liberation and the War to Resist  
U.S.Agression and Aid Korea(1946-1953)

#### 10.Scars of Wounds on Their Bodies-a Certificate of Merit: Servicewomen in the War of Liberation (1946-1949)

In the spring of 1947, more than 800 heroes that had taken part in the Subei, Lunan and Laiwu Campaigns were cited in the first victory meeting ceremoniously held in Jiaoji County, Shandong Province by the First Column of the East China Field Army. In the Laiwu Campaign, more than 50 thousand enemies were wiped out and over 20 cities and towns in Jiaoji County were liberated by the 6 columns of the East china Field Army. Having summarized the fighting experience, Ye Fei ,the column commanding officer, changed the subject by mentioning a servicewoman. He said: "I think if all the medical workers take her as an example, then not a single soldier's life will be lost and not a single soldier will complain of pain in future campaigns. I say, she has not only rendered meritorious service, but should also be set as the model medical worker for the whole column. do you agree with me?" "Yes!" thousands of officers and men replied in chorus. She was the special-class heroine Jiang Nanping. During the Subei Campaign, the third Brigade in which Jiang Nanping worked stuck into the enemy's heart, thus insuring the victory of the whole campaign. Following the troops closely, Jiang, despite her own wound, twice dashed into the burning civilian houses set on fire by the bombardment of the enemy planes and managed to rescue the wounded soldiers, Rather than treating herself as one of the wounded, Jiang carried stretchers, boiled water, and nursed the wounded, following the troops in their fighting all the way from the northern Jiangsu to southern shandong and then from the Yimeng Mountains to the Jiao-Ji Railway until the victory of the Laiwu Campaign. After the Lunan Campaign. the troops to which she belonged was redesignated from the New Fourth Army to the People's Liberation Army.

A new chapter was opened up in the history of Chinese servicewomen.

In June 1946, Chiang Kai-shek, brazenly tearing up all the peaceful agreements, including the Truce Agreement and the Political Consultative Conference Agreement, pressed the siege to the liberated areas in the Central Plains, and starting from there, launched an all out offensive against the whole liberated areas, thus imposing an unprecedented full-scale civil war on the Chinese people. Under the leadership of the Chinese Communist party, the army and the people of the liberated areas rose in self-defense and fought bravely against

Chiang Kai-shek's attack. During the War of Resistance Against Japan, the Eighth Route Army and the New Fourth Army were redesignated as the Chinese People's Liberation Army. In the course of the War of Liberation, the Chinese People's Liberation Army made a clean and quick swipe of 8 million troops of the Kuomintang. News of victory kept pouring in. The wars taken part in by the servicewomen of the PLA were the largest in scale in the history of Chinese servicewomen.

The PLA was divided into the First, the Second, the Third and the Fourth Field Armies in accordance with its different stations in north China, the Northwest, east China, and the Northeast. The servicewomen in the Field Armies mostly worked in hospitals, communications stations and art troupes. Within the East China Field Army, female medical workers made up 30% of the total number of the medical personnel at the front. Many of them assumed various roles such as deputy directors of the column medical units, hospital presidents and heads of medical teams, etc. They often worked in the open country and villages only dozens of li from the frontline and tirelessly rescued groups after groups of wounded soldiers under the wanton and indiscriminate bombing of Chiang's and American planes. They frequently transferred from place to place with troops, keeping a marching speed of 5 kilometers per hour. In addition, they learned how to climb over walls and houses, pass through obstacles and cross irrigation canals and ditches. Sometimes they had to make a rapid march of about one to two hundred li on end in order to reach the designated place and then start rescue and treatment work all at once. Li Landing, woman leader of a medical team and honored as "the Chinese Nightingale," once escorted 500 wounded soldiers to the safe place despite the bombardment of the planes, the pursuit of the enemies, the ceaseless heavy rain, and innumerable other dire conditions. Ding Zhihui, president of the field hospital of the the 39th Army under the Northeast Field Army, participated in the Jinzhou, Shenyang, Tianjin and some other campaigns. The hospital directed by her achieved the best cure rate among the whole army and for five times won the title of "Model of the Whole Army." Of the 398 servicewomen in the 41st Army under the Northeast Field Army, 140 rendered meritorious service. During the Suiji Campaign, the headquarters at the most critical moment of the campaign, lost contact with the front because of the thunderclaps. Chen Yan, a woman telegraph operator, worked from 3 o'clock in the afternoon to the small hours of the next day and eventually managed to bring the two into contact again. She was awarded a First-Class People's Hero medal by the Army because of her outstanding accomplishments.

The heroic deeds of the servicewomen were continually on the lips of soldiers both at the front and in the rear.

In 1945, a strange soldier was enrolled to the Independent Regiment

of the Rebei Military Subarea of the Eighth Route Army. He always went to bed with his clothes on. When sleeping with several others on the adobe bed, he preferred to take a side place with his head resting on his bayonet and his gun laid beside the soldier next to him to "keep guard." Whenever the troops were about to start, he would go out for a while on horseback and then hurry back to fall in. For this reason he was frequently criticized by the company commander. What was even more puzzling to his comrades-in-arms was that he never went to the toilet together with them. Prompted by curiosity rather than malice, they decided to reveal the secret. Once, while playing about in the interval of a fighting, a soldier suddenly held him in his arms. All at once he turned back, pulled out the bayonet and shouted angrily: "Be aware of my bayonet if you play such jokes on me." Then he turned running to the branch secretary and complained in tears about the soldiers who freely make a body search of him. Thereafter, the soldiers let go of him as being merely eccentric. Yet, this eccentric soldier fought bravely on the battlefield, whipping a horse after the enemy and wrestling with the naked sword. In the course of over 10 battles, he was cited for special-class meritorious service once, for exceptionally meritorious service for 3 times and minor meritorious service for 4 times. He was promoted from a soldier to the rank of squad leader and then to platoon leader. After the Anti-Japanese War, he took part in the War of Liberation. By the time of the LiaoShe Campaign, he was already a deputy political instructor. An unprecedentedly large blocking action in the history of the War of Liberation was unfolded in the Dalazishan Mountains. Into this battle the Kuomintang threw massive forces of 1 divisions, intending to rescue Jinzhou from a siege. The whole position was turned into a sea of fire by the bombardment of the enemy's artillery fire. With all bullets used up, the deputy political instructor led the soldiers in dashing into the enemy troops with rifles taken off from the dead. The soulstirring battle lasted for three days and nights. By the fourth day when the fraternal troops came to relieve the garrison, of the 2,000 or so troops in the whole regiment, fewer than 500 officers and men withdrew from the position without being seriously wounded. He was one of the survivors from this fierce battle. The soldiers all loved this head of theirs who was both good at fighting and considerate of others. There was a soldier who frequently wetted the bed. It was he who helped the soldier wash his sheet in the extremely cold days and asked the farmers for folk recipe. Deeply moved, the soldier told the truth. It turned out that he just pretended to have the defect because of his fear of hardship and his homesickness. Later the soldier laid down his life in the battle at the Dalazishan mountains while the deputy political instructor followed the troops in fighting from the Northeast straight down to

Guangdong until the victory of the whole country. Having fought in so many places and for such a long time, he was eventually hospitalized in 1950. To the surprise of many, he was discovered to be suffering from serious gynaecological disease. This combat hero, who had fought north and south on many fronts, was actually a female. She was named Guo Junqing and had just reached the age of 20. Without prior knowledge by her family, she joined the army to revenge her father. To be admitted by the troops, she lied about her age and disguised her real sex. By the time when the war was over, she was old enough to be concerned with love and romance. Unfortunately, serious gynaecological disease forced her to undergo a total hysterectomy. She declined the wholehearted courting by male companions who had established profound feelings with her during the war, putting out relentlessly the fire of her own love. She had her own theory, just as when she disguised herself as a man in the war years. For the sake of war, she gave up everything that a woman should have.

Just when the Northeast Field Army which Guo Junqing followed was having a rest and reorganization at the end of the Pingjing Campaign, the Campaign of Luoyang in the Central Plains was also about to come to an end. When the bugle call sounded for emergency muster, a servicewoman rushed out hurriedly from a farmer's house and ran into the ranks in rapid march, her hand raising high with a sorghum stalk a roll of films which still dripped water. She was Yang Ling, the only camerawoman in the war. The camera she carried was one of the war trophies captured from the Japanese in attacking Ju County in 1943. Since her first photograph "Officials of UN General Administration of Relief Visit the Kindergartens of the Shandong Military Command" was published, she had followed each campaign on the east China battlefield. On Jan. 10th, 1949, the Huaihai Campaign that had lasted over two months was drawing to an end. Dilapidated walls and buildings could be seen everywhere in battle-stricken villages. Yang Ling, having busily worked for a whole day, did not find a place for rest until after midnight when she stopped for a rest in a remaining cowshed. She and her comrades-in-arms were encouraged each day by news of victory. She fought with the troops from Xuchang to Luohe and from Kaifeng to Luoyang. This campaign was one wherein the enemies wiped out were the largest in number. The forces directed by Huang Bوتاo and Du Yuming, the Kuomintang's crack troops, were entirely destroyed. Yang Ling lay in a hay stack, listening to the chewing of cattle, smelling the foul smell of cow dung, and watching the arc light of tracer bullets streaking across the low sky. Suddenly, there was a stir among the troops: "The enemy tank is fleeing!" At this Yang Ling rose up swiftly and hurried from the cavalry unit to the chariot regiment. Then she jumped onto one of the tanks at the front and held up the camera in her hand.

Realizing that this was a servicewoman, the soldiers, afraid that she might fall down from the tank, enclosed her with their bodies, Standing steadily on the tank, she clicked the shutter again and again, shooting the whole process of pursuing and intercepting the enemy tank and drawing the final full stop to the largest battle of annihilation in the history of war.

In 1948, Li Landing, a woman leader of a medical team who was known in the whole army, arrived after a long journey at Xibaipo of Pingshan County, Hebei Province, where the Central Committee of the Chinese Communist Party was seated. She reported the situation at the east China front, especially the heroic deeds of the servicewomen in east China. Deeply affected, Deng Yingchao wrote the article "Salute to the Women Cadres Working at the Frontline of the East China Field Army," wherein she gave a detailed introduction to such comrades as Jiang Nanping, Ding Huiqing, Li Landing and Yao Jian. She wrote passionately in the article:

"For you who have survived, the scars of wounds on your bodies will forever be a certificate of merit. and for those who are ahead, their illustrious names will forever be memorized. You are the excellent daughters of the Chinese people. You are the fine cadres of the PLA and you are the glory of women in China!"

#### 11. "Doves of Peace" amid the Smoke of Gunpowder: Chinese People's Women Volunteers (1950-1953)

When the Chinese volunteers, singing military songs, crossed the Yalu River in Oct. 1950, there were no servicewomen in this mighty force. He Wei, a service-woman who had followed the 115th Division of the Eighth Route Army since the War of Resistance Against Japan, left her troops at this time. It was on a winter morning in 1950 that the troops held an oath-taking rally before going to fight in Korea. He Wei and her comrades-in-arms made a solemn vow: Resist US aggression and aid Korea. Protect our homes and defend our country. In the evening when the troops were just about to leave for Korea, a senior officer had a talk with her, saying that she should remain in the motherland to receive education and participate in the construction of New China. She was asked to leave for Beijing immediately and check in at the General Political Department. She burst into tears, being reluctant to separate from the troops with which she was linked together and had become one through her long-term war career. She was reluctant, simply reluctant! But this was an order and it was a bounden duty for servicemen and servicewomen to obey orders. With tears in her eyes, she bid good-bye to her comrades-in-arms marching to the front and her husband who was in command of the troops.

This was a triphibious war in which we fought with the most mighty forces of united nations headed by the American troops. When marshal Peng Dehuai was about to go out to battle with his troops, he resolutely left all their servicewomen back at home. Cao Xin, director of the art troupe of the 15th Army, made great efforts before he managed to persuade his women members to stay in the rear office at home. At first, he couldn't straighten out his thinking either. What happiness the servicewomen had brought to the soldiers! he even couldn't imagine how to perform those moving songs and dances without the servicemen on the stage. But when he and his troupe members marched towards the front with the troops at the speed of nearly 100 li per day with enemy planes diving to bomb wantonly and indiscriminately, he completely understood what marshal Peng really meant: It is time for our servicewomen to enjoy the peace in New China.

Tempered by the war, the Chinese women had become mature, transcending over the parochial field of domestic life and roaming about in a more open space. The hostilities in the Korean front once again stirred the hearts of the Chinese women. One after another they wrote applications and blood letters for the approval of their going to the front. A young woman by the name of Zhang Weimin was a mother who had just given birth to her child. She said: "All mothers love their children. But when so many children's lives are in danger, how can I just stay at home and take care of my own baby? The War to Resist US Aggression and Aid Korea is being fought to protect thousands of millions of children. "Thus, by March 1951, many young mothers and young girls had quitted their peaceful and happy life, bid farewell to their family members and lovers, and headed bravely for the front. They "flew" to the battlefield enveloped in the smoke of gunpowder like a crowd of "doves of peace" holding olive branches in their mouths and cherishing the lofty ideals of patriotism and internationalism.

Liu Ruobing, a girl from Sichuan, had just reached the age of 17 when she arrived in Korea. She was assigned to a division field hospital to work as a nurse. During the long march, she and many other girls got blisters on their feet. But none of them complained, fearing that they might be sent back home or left behind for a rest. Some girls found cracks in their feet which caused them so much pain that they simply filled them with balls of rice. Entering Korea to fight was a hard-won right for the servicewomen. So when some people said openly: "Servicewomen are good for nothing!" they were determined to show them what they could do. It was raining cats and dogs and the troops marched on in the heavy rain. The blisters on Liu Ruobing's feet, soaked open by the rain water mixed with the silt that had entered her shoes on the way, caused the unbearable pain at first. Then the pain gave way to numbness and her feet became as heavy as the sliding weight of a

steelyard. Seeing the way she walked, the squad leader Guo Xiaojiang asked in solicitude: "Can you manage?" She nodded with a smile at the squad leader. The exhausted servicewoman simplified all her words and actions. During a rest on the way, they could find no shelter and lacked rain gear. Liu Ruoging fell asleep on a rock beside the road. Rain drops clapped on her face. The considerate squad leader took out a drinking cup and put it on Little Liu's forehead to catch the rain water. But the latter was not at all aware of this. By the time the bugle for muster sounded, the cup on her forehead was already filled with rain water.

The newly-enrolled servicewoman was constantly presented with all sorts of trials of war. The fifth campaign was one in which our troops fought the hardest of battles for the longest of time and suffered the greatest of casualties on the Korean battlefield. There were craters after craters and corpses were burning everywhere. As the road was blocked by the enemy's ground artillery fire, the automobiles and teams of stretcher-carriers for transporting the wounded soldiers became unavailable. The 17-year-old servicewoman and her comrades-in arms had to carry wounded soldiers heavier than themselves and transfer towards the rear. When she came back again, the president of the hospital stopped her: "Here are 38 slightly wounded soldiers. We've decided that you're to take them back to the rear without a single loss. I'll lead the rest to carry out a new mission." Receiving a task all by herself for the first time, Liu Ruobing was at a loss what to say. Imitating the way of senior comrades, she saluted the president with her hand: "I promise to accomplish the task. The wounded will be live if I'm alive." This was an oath constantly on their did she feel its real weight. Of the 38 slightly wounded soldiers, almost each was older than she. They were "slightly wounded" only when they were compared with those seriously wounded soldiers who were out of consciousness. Liu Ruobing was fully aware that they were surrounded by the enemy on both sides. Some zones were in a jagged, interlocking form; some were blockaded by the enemy. With the sound of the wild roaring of the enemy planes, the bombardment of shells, and the shooting of machine-guns constantly on their ears, they could meet the enemy face to face at any time. Except for some parched flour bags and canteens of the dozen or so wounded soldiers on her, Liu Ruobing did not even have a grenade. For the first time and in earnest she envisaged the manner of dying: fight recklessly with the enemy and die together with them. Such, however, was impossible for a girl like her. A soldier without arms on the battlefield was like a rabbit among a pack of wolves. The girl who was in command of troops for a while without ideas. "It all depends!" she said to herself. If she was captured on the road, she would imitate the Korean heroine Zhao Yuzhao and if on the high mountain or steep cliff, she would imitate the five warriors of the Langyashan

Mountains. Upon looking back at the 38 wounded soldiers, however, she suddenly realized the simplicity of her thinking: "They are my wounded soldiers. I shouldn't just think of death. We must try to get out of the fix." Liu Ruobing resumed her former liveliness and started to sing Song of the Youth League Members. It was getting dark. They couldn't identify clearly the road signs trodden by troops coming and going. "I mustn't take the wounded soldiers to the enemy," Liu Ruobing warned herself. Whenever they got to a crossing, she herself would go forward to explore the way while the wounded settled down to take a rest. Fully convinced that she had found the right way, she would turn back to lead the wounded. To avoid the attack by the enemy's artillery fire, she disguised all the wounded soldiers and had the 38 of them spaced out for as long as 100 meters. She now ordered them to "lie down," now ran back and forth to take care of the physically weak brothers. When it was time for meals she would untie the bags and canteens and mix the parched flour for them. Three days passed. When Liu Ruobing led the 38 wounded soldiers to the hospital in the rear, she could hardly utter a word. One of her friends held her in the arms and said: "We were almost worried to death about you. It was even rumoured that you had been captured!"

Almost each of the women volunteers was like a "goddess" on the battlefield. Wang Liansheng, a seriously wounded soldier, was so injured in the abdomen that he couldn't urinate himself. He would die without being catheterized in time. Unfortunately, there were no catheters in the hospital at the front. Tian Jing, a woman doctor in the hospital, catheterized him with her mouth instead four times in succession without hesitation, thus helping Wang Liansheng tide over the period of danger.

On her way of carrying meals to the wounded, Li Benxiang, a woman nurse, encountered enemy planes. She had enough time to run and hide herself in the air raid shelter where the wounded stayed. Fearing that the position would be given away, she just lay down on the spot, caring nothing about the wanton and indiscriminate bombing by the enemy planes all around her. All the wounded soldiers were safe and sound while Li Benxiang was seriously wounded, suffering a fracture in her right arm and receiving bullets in the left.

After performing for the soldiers in the tunnel at the front, Xie Xiumei, one of the art troupe members, helped the medical workers carry stretchers. It happened to be severe winter when the temperature was 30 degrees below zero. By the time they escorted the wounded to the destination after traveling across mountains and rivers, they found that the leather shoes on the wounded soldiers' feet couldn't be put off because they were frozen together. It was Xie Xiumei who unbuttoned her cottonpadded jacket and held their feet to her own breast, thus



melting the frozen feet of the wounded soldiers with her own body temperature....

With what they had done, the servicewomen not only won the right to continue to stay in Korea but also gained the love and esteem of the officers and men at the front and people in the motherland, In 1952, Liu Ruobing and 20 other servicewomen were received by the leaders of the state as members of the Returned Volunteers' Delegation. Holding the hands of Liu Ruobing ,a little fellow villager, Zhu De, commander in chief of the PLA, asked:"Did you wear this cotton-padded jacket in korea?" "Yes." "Weren't you cold?" "No!" She was too excited to say anything more. Everything in front of her was just like a dream. On the scorched earth bombarded in turns by shells, she and her comrades-in-arms had time and again envisaged the beautiful landscape of the peaceful motherland. They missed their motherland and family members all the time. Now that they were back home and saw their family members, these servicewomen, despite all the tribulations they had gone through, had only one thing in mind: Let the people of the motherland rest assured: let the family members rest assured! No matter where they went, they would never mention the grievances and hardships they had experienced. rather they would focus on the volunteers' breadth of vision, on the heroism at the battlefield and on the close friendship between the Chinese volunteers and the Korean People's Army and the Korean people. So Liu Ruo-ging had told a "lie" in her talk with the commander in chief, a white lie. After returning home, Liu Ruobing and her comrades-in-arms changed into the new uniforms of the PLA. In the Korean War, our servicewomen, like all the other troops, had no chance to take a bath ,When the returned Volunteers' Delegation entered the gate of the motherland, no one recognized them--the most beloved. Their uniforms were all so stained with blood and smoke of gunpowder that it was hard to make out the colors. In the words of Liu Ruobing, "We were as dirty as a crowd of army cooks." One month later, Liu Rubing and her comrades-in-arms went back to the Korean front with the cordial greetings extended by the people of the motherland.

The homeland, like a strong mother, constituted a reliable backing to the servicemen and servicewomen.

#### IV. Women's Emancipation: A Bloodstained Monument

##### 12. Price Paid in Breaking through the Darkness

On the night of Dec. 13th, 1927, the reports of gunfire of the Guangzhou Uprising gradually became sporadic. Yet a sickle-and-axe red flag was still fluttering in the smoke of gunpowder in front of the Tianzi dock at the northern bank of the Zhujiang River. Standing under the flag was a squad of servicewomen who had lost contact with the headquarters. A 19-year-old woman soldier, holding high a bent bayonet, said to her wounded comrades-in-arms: "We will fight to the last person to protect this red flag!" The enemy discovered finally that it were a few young women who were defending the last fort. "Catch them alive!" They thronged forward while shouting. Yet what they had not expected was that this was a group of servicewomen who would die rather than surrender. The squad leader You Xi, who was a cadet of the Women's Group in the Huangpu Military Academy, was commanding the fighting. They tried to withdraw while wrestling with the enemy. Gradually, however, with the dying out of the sound of wrestling, all the soldiers of the women's squad laid down their lives heroically. You Xi's body was cut into several pieces by the enemy who put them on the dock for "public exposure."

While looking about on the former battlefield, we felt as if we could still hear the delicate voice of the pubescent leader of the servicewomen's squad.

The Chinese servicewomen kindled the holy flames of destroying the feudal system with their flesh and blood. For the first time in the long history of China, they revealed most firmly Chinese women's independent human dignity. We can't count the exact number of women who died in the long course of the harsh revolutionary struggle because of the limited conditions at that time. According to the record of modern Chinese history, nearly 30 million people died for the new China's independence and liberation, among whom, there were thousands upon thousands of servicewomen who died a most tragic death in Chinese history. Up to now, the slogans "Overthrow the Local Tyrants, Allot Fields to Peasants" and "All Rights Should Be Turned Over to the Peasants' Union" can still be seen on photos or in museums. They could be found anywhere on the Jinggang Mountains at that time. But we are seldom aware that many of the slogans were written by a servicewoman of the Red Army.

She was Wu Ruolan, who was once in charge of the Women's Federation in Leiyang County, Hunan Province and who joined the Communist Party in 1926. She was an important criminal listed as wanted by the Leiyang

government for the crimes of taking the lead in resisting against Japanese goods, expressing support for the general strike by workers in Shanghai, organizing the propaganda team in support of the Northern Expedition and leading the struggle against the local tyrants and evilgentry. In Feb. 1928, after the First Division of the Chinese Workers' and Peasants' revolutionary army led by Zhu De and Chen Yi arrived in Hunan, Wu Ruolan took part in the armed uprising led by the Communist Party Committee of Leiyang County. After that, she led a group of young students in joining the Red Army. Later she got married with Zhu De.

She was not respected merely for being Zhu De's wife. She was known throughout the Jinggangshan areas for being a calligrapher of the Red Army and for being able to shoot with both hands. She would often carry two pistols and hold one writing brush, displaying very much the graceful bearing of a learned general. One early morning in Feb. 1929, Wu Ruolan, who had just got up and didn't have time to clean up yet, suddenly heard some unusual sounds from the nearby jungles. "Too bad! We have been surrounded by the enemy." After reporting to Zhu De, the army commander, she threw herself into the fighting together with a few soldiers at her side. Many of the enemies fell at the sound of her two pistols. Then they aimed their machine-gun at this "focus." Wu Ruolan was seriously wounded. But she continued shooting at the enemy with her two pistols. The enemy did not realize that this unique opponent of theirs was a woman until they rushed forward from behind the position and pressed her down to the ground. Wu Ruolan fought hand-to-hand with the enemy....When she regained consciousness, she found herself in the enemy's prison.

Informed that she was Zhu De's wife, the enemy compelled her to confess the internal organizations of the Red Army and its military operations and the local members of the Communist Party. But Wu Ruolan scolded them severely and exposed them relentlessly. In return, she received doubly harsh torture. On Feb. 12th, Wu Ruolan, beaten black and blue, was put to death on the execution ground in Ganzhou. The last words people heard her utter from her feeble chest were: "Long live the Red Army!" The folks looking on all shed tears. After her death, her head was cut off by the enemy who had it hang on a frame with the words "Wu Ruolan, wife of Zhu De, chieftain of the Communist bandits" and then put it on a bamboo raft floating down along Gan River for "public exposure along the river."

It could be termed "carry on the revolution with the head in the hands."

At that time, the revolutionary strength of the Red Army was called "fire of single sparks." The Red Armywomen were even smaller in number and weaker in strength. On the Jinggangshan Mountains there

were only a hundred-odd Red Armywomen like Wu Ruolan. They were a group of solitary revolutionaries as well as heroic martyrs. More often than not, they died a more heroic death than men. However, for various reasons, the blood they shed and the sacrifices they made were long buried in the depth of history.

In the summer of 1933, Liu Zhenhua, appointed by Chiang Kai-shek as commander in chief of the communist-suppressing troops in the three provinces of Hubei, Henan and Anhui, mustered forces to eliminate the 25th Division of the Red Army. Numerous people in the Dabieshan Mountains areas were killed or starved to death. An area of several dozen li, ranging from Yangtianwo to Maocaojian, was turned into a "No man's land." The 25th Division's hospital had to be transferred into the remote and thickly forested mountains in the vicinity of Yangtianwo bordering Hubei and Henan. Red Armywoman Zhou Dongping and her comrades-in-arms hid a dozen or so wounded soldiers separately in the nearby caves. A 17-year-old woman nurse was caught by the enemy when she was looking for edible wild herbs.

The skinny servicewoman was bound tightly on a dead tree, a bayonet being aimed at her throat.

"Tell the truth. Where have the wounded been hidden?"

"Tell them that the Red Army has been surrounded and ask them to get out to surrender voluntarily."

Then the young girl kept silent. She fainted as a result of being lashed again and again by the enemy with a leather belt, but when she recovered, she still kept silent. Even when the enemy threatened to burn her to death by setting fire to the tree branches put up in front of her, she still said nothing. The branches burst into flames and she was relentlessly swallowed by the raging fire. What the enemy could hear was only her extremely tragic shriek. Although over half a century had passed, Zhou Dongping could still clearly remember what had happened outside the cave. She said: "My heart was almost broken. You know, she was only 17 years old. To her life had just begun!" The young girl was not required to choose such a way of living by the accepted moral standard at that time.

Again on the Dabieshan Mountains, Red Armywoman Zhou Shuying was leading the masses in hiding grain from the enemy when the latter arrived. She was betrayed by a traitor before she could transfer and was caught by the enemy. She was told that she could be set free if she would confess where the grain was. She refused, knowing that the grain meant life to her comrades-in-arms. Then the enemy cut off her breasts and cut her corpse into several pieces, exposing them in the broad daylight.

Like other females, the servicewomen took the roles as women, mothers and wives. What made them different from other females was that they were soldiers and for some, even commanders on battlefields. On

an evening in July 1929, more than 4,000 enemy launched an attack on the guerrilla forces led by Hu Jun, a woman commander. Just when the mountain top was shrouded in the smoke of gunpowder and lashed by the pouring of bullets, an infant's crying was heard from the command post. Hu Jun's daughter came into the world on the battlefield. When the enemy launched the 5th attack, Hu kept commanding the battle by sitting in a large bamboo basket carried by her comrades-in-arms. The enemy were defeated and fled the battlefield. But who still remembers this woman commander today? In talking about the Pingjiang Uprising, people will probably mention marshal Peng Dehuai, but not Hu Jun, the woman commander. However, the victory of the Pingjiang Uprising was ensured thanks to her cooperative operations with Peng Dehuai in 1928. She also used to be one of the most active woman cadets in the Huangpu Military Academy as well as one of the few woman commanders on the battlefields. The enemy had constantly threatened to catch her alive, putting up her photos everywhere and offering a great reward for the capture of her. In the eyes of ordinary men, she much exceeded what was proper. She not only violated the ancient teaching of "covering her face when going out and hiding herself when looking around outside," but also commanded an armed force which was predominately male. She was doomed to fall a victim to the Chinese feudal society. She died in Jan. 1933 at the age of 37 only.

That Hu Jun, after giving birth to a child, could still command the battle by sitting in a bamboo basket is hard to imagine for most people of today, but it was counted as "happiness" in the period of the Red Army. For most servicewomen, they were confronted with the painful departure from their own flesh and blood upon hearing the first cry of their babies. In the winter of 1936, there fell a rarely seen heavy snow in the areas of the Dabieshan Mountains. Crotches as thick as bowls were broken by the heavy snow. The ground was iced over and everywhere one could hear the cracking of tree branches. Several dozen servicewomen of a women's platoon of the Red Army were besieged by the enemy in the icy and snowy world. Servicewoman Zhang Min was delivered of a girl baby here.

Her comrades-in-arms felt happy for her, but worried about the infant at the same time. They had got nothing to eat for day. The infant, crying piteously for food, was so hungry that she kept crying day and night, which might attract the attention of the enemy.

On the early morning of the 6th day after the baby's birth, the servicewomen heard Zhang Min's call for help. They came and found that she was tightly holding her daughter, leaning herself against the cane wall. The baby lay quietly in her arms.

The baby was suffocated to death.

They were not discovered by the enemy.

The platoon leader Yuan Cuiming lost her temper: "Are you crazy, Comrade Zhang Min?"

Zhang Min, hanging her head, whispered: "The child is my own flesh, but at the moment...."

For the past 6 days, she had kept silent the whole time, shedding tears upon hearing the baby's crying for food. She found a cave nearby and crawled inside, thinking that once discovered by the enemy, her comrades-in-arms wouldn't be affected. The servicewomen took care of her in turn, feeding the lovely baby with what they could find. They said jokingly that the child belonged to the whole platoon.

Amidst the wind and snow of the Dabieshan Mountains, the servicewomen dug a grave and held a "funeral" for their child. All the servicewomen shed tears.

Several decades passed. Comrade Zhang Min also died of ill nests later. Few could remember the 6-day-old girl baby and her mother. But they once lived in this world.

It was not an unusual thing for the servicewomen to "get rid of" their own babies in the war period.

The human history witnessed for the first time the Long march, which proved to the world that the Red Armymen were brave warriors. However, few people knew what the Red Armywomen had experienced in climbing over the bridges snow-covered mountains and plodding through the marshlands unmarked by human traces. Cai Chang, a well-known Red Armywoman, who served as chairwoman of the All-China Women's Federation after liberation, wrote with deep feeling in recalling the Long March: "Although our servicewomen were endowed with an iron will, they were after all human beings made of blood and flesh. Long expeditions, hunger, cold, exhaustion, wind and immersion in water and what not left many healthy servicewomen with gynaecological diseases. The majority of them did not have menstruation any longer and some were unable to have children for the rest of their lives. There were 4 servicewomen who started out on the long journey in pregnancy and gave birth to babies upon arriving at Guizhou. In order to catch up with the troops, they had to give their newborn infants to others. In the poor and remote villages of Guizhou, it was even difficult to find a family that could afford to adopt the offsprings of the Red armywomen. Comrade He Zizhen gave her baby to a lonely blind old woman; Comrade Zeng Yu left her baby in an empty room with a note on it; and Comrade Chen Huiqing put her baby at the foot of an anonymous hill....The lying-in mothers couldn't get any rest or enough nutrition. They even couldn't stay long with their babies. The hearts of these mothers couldn't be more grieved." How many mother servicewomen died in the war and how many children of the servicewomen's died in the war?

On Sept. 15th, 1943, Japanese troops and traitors called out an

army of 40 thousand strong and carried out for three months the so-called "burning, killing and robbing" devastating mopping-up operations on the anti Japanese base near the border area of Shenxi, Chahaer and Hebei Provinces. More than 8 thousand people were killed. Zhang Li, and Eighth Route Army servicewoman, was captured with a 3-month-old baby in her arms. She was stark naked and the blood on her bayonet-stabbed body coagulated when her comrades-in-arms found her. Following pieces of clothes and blood stains on the ground, they found her baby in a folks' caldron. The little being had already been boiled to death by the Japanese troops. Zhang Li had been a college student who took part in the Anti-Japanese War in Beijing.

Servicewoman Li Lin, coming all the way across the ocean from Indonesia, threw herself into the Anti-Japanese War. She was the head of the anti-Japanese guerrilla forces in Yanbei and then took the role as the political instructor of the cavalry battalion of the 120th Division of the Eighth Route Army. She was well-known for her bravery in the rear areas of the enemy, who once offered a huge sum of 5 thousand yuan for getting her head. When the enemy mopped up the border area of Hebei and Suiyuan in 1940, she led the troops in smashing 8 Japanese mopping-up operations. As luck would have it, she was injured in the 9th anti-mopping-up operation. While the enemy shouted "Catch her alive," Li Lin, with a pistol in each hand, kept pressing the triggers until she ran out of ammunition. Then she died a heroic death, shooting the last bullet into her own throat. At that time she was already a mother with 3-month pregnancy. The Japanese troops dismembered her remains with bayonets.

In the war years, even though some servicewomen became mothers after a narrow escape from death, deep in their minds there was a dark shadow concerning child bearing which was hard to wipe away.

The eldest son of Yin Zhi, an anti-Japanese servicewoman, was born on the eve of New China's liberation. There were 7 other infants who were born almost at the same time as he was. But none of them survived. One of the young mothers went mad. Wherever the troops arrived, she would crazily dig the earth with her hands, all the while calling her baby's name. No one could stop her. She was convinced that she could see her baby underground. Her hands were drenched with blood. For those who were about to give birth to babies, they, holding their abdomens in their hands, did not know what would happen to them. Never could Yin Zhi forget how the comrades-in-arms delivered their babies in dilapidated temples with wind blowing in from all sides or in tree pits during their long march and how they buried in tears the babies whose life ended the moment they came into the world. Never could she forget the blood-stained hands of the crazy young mother who kept digging the earth. The mentioning of the experience was always like a nightmare

to her. She said: "It is over 40 years since liberation. My son is about 50 years old. But I have never taken him to visit my comrades-in-arms of those years. I simply dare not. I am afraid they will be grimed upon seeing my son. My son survived. But their children died. Such pain I can never face!"

Red Armywoman Chen Zongying was of "high rank" in that she was the wife of Ren Bishi, one of the five important secretaries of the Central Committee and head of the Second Front Red Army. But her life was constantly accompanied by the looking for and missing of her lost sons. When Ren Bishi was put into prison in 1928, Chen Zongying took a coal-carrying train with her little daughter Sumin for Changsha for the rescue of her husband. It was cold and windy all the way. Coal ash and lumps fell constantly upon them. Little Sumin was seized with pneumonia and had a high fever. Hardly had she rescued her husband when her daughter died. When the Red Army was breaking through on a western expedition in 1931, the couple entrusted their newborn son called Xiang Gan to the local folks. His whereabouts is unknown up to now. Their second son, like his brother, was also entrusted to the folks soon after birth. Whether he is alive or dead is still unknown. Yuanzhi, their fourth child, was thrown into Longhua Prison in Shanghai together with her mother fewer than one hundred days after her birth. When rescued from prison by the Central Committee, Yuanzhi was over one year old. Not long after she came out of prison, Chen Zongying received a telegram from Zhou Enlai who asked her to go to the Soviet areas as soon as possible. Chen Zongying had no choice but to entrust Yuanzhi, just set free from prison and only a little over one year old, to the folks in Ren Bishi's native place. Yuanzhi was already 15 years old when she finally united with her parents in Yan'an after overcoming lots of difficulties. It was the first time that she saw her own father, who called her "my eldest daughter." Many uncles in Yan'an, including Mao Zedong, Zhou Enlai and Liu Shaoqi, also followed her father in calling her "the eldest daughter." It was many years before Yuanzhi learned from her parents that she was not their eldest daughter. Not only did she have two elder brothers and an elder sister whom she had never met, she also had two younger brother whom she could never see. As to her mother, she had experienced five painful departures with her own flesh and blood. In 1950, Ren Bishi, on his deathbed, still exhorted Chen Zongying to "continue inquiring about Xiang Gan."

years upon years have passed by since liberation. Chen Zongying, like many other servicewomen who had lost their children in the war years, returned again and again to the old haunt of was, looking for her lost children. How she and the others expected to reunite with their own children, but each time they were disappointed, leaving ceaseless tears on the uneven rut. Eventually Chen Zongying found the folks who



had adopted one of her sons. But what she saw was only a sweater worn by her son in his childhood. Tears dropped from her eyes when she held in both hands the sweater that still seemed to keep the temperature of her son. She

### 13. Eternal Echoes of the Dead and Buried

The Chinese servicewomen always took the lead in the process of the social development in China. Their strong and independent character originated from their unremitting self-exploration and constant pursuit. However, many young people today know so little about their life that they ask doubtfully: "Could this be true?" Now let's read together the yellowish letters and notes left by the servicewomen before their death, have a spiritual exchange with them and listen to the eternal echoes of the spirits of the martyrs dead and buried.

Mao LiYing, who took part in "The Long March Organization for National Salvation" in 1937, was killed secretly by special agents of the Japanese puppet army when she was only 29. Before the Organization went out to battle, she made a well-known speech: "I love my mother, but I love my motherland, too. Now our motherland is in danger and disaster. She needs us young people more. My mother is aging and I am her only daughter. She loves me and I love her. We depend on each other for survival in peacetime. But now it's different. If I want to devote myself to the motherland, I have to depart from her. Otherwise, I won't be able to throw myself into the defense of the motherland. I felt sad and at a loss what to do at first. But finally I made up my mind and chose the motherland. When I explained my choice to her in tears. You can see that my eyes are red with crying. Hearing my mother cry almost shook my determination. But when I thought of the disaster and slaughter the invaders had imposed upon our country and our people, I became resolute again."

Sun Xiaomei, a girl from a respectable family who, unwilling to be bound to the feudal morality, was divorced from her husband working in an institution of the Kuomintang, wrote a letter after she joined the New Fourth Army to her mother who had tried to dissuade her from the act, elaborating her own opinions on life, family, ideals and the future. She said: "I am a young person with sense and courage. I won't be fooled and made use of by others. I will struggle hard for my ideal and my future. I will never blindly fall into the abyss of darkness. Endowed by nature with a tenacious will, I'm not afraid of any pressure, any threat or any reproach. I can resolutely break through the shackles of the feudal morality. The 'fame' and 'gain' I am seeking for is what the masses are seeking for. I take no interest in getting any personal 'fame' or 'gain' I .... We strive for the welfare of the masses. Any

personal interest we always put at a secondary place. 'Total loyalty defies total filial piety.' This is a well-known saying by all loyal officials and righteous men. Please forgive me, my dear mother. I can't do what you want me to do and fall a victim to the feudal society."

These servicewomen, who should have been kept far away from war, resolutely joined the army for the dignity of the motherland and for their own emancipation. Nevertheless, deep in their hearts, they were filled with contempt for the war, resolutely joined the army for the dignity of the motherland and for their own emancipation. Nevertheless, deep in their hearts, they were filled with contempt for the war of aggression and the aggressors. Sun Xiaomei wrote a letter to her aunt to the effect that all human beings had feelings; that they loved their parents, husbands, wives, brothers and sisters; that even animals had the feeling of paying a debt of gratitude, let alone we human beings; that our fellow countrymen were being murdered by invaders and therefore we should rise in self-defense; that for the past three or four years, lots of people had separated from their family members, lots of families had been ruined and lots of people had died on battlefields; that though we were all mortal beings, we should die a worthy death and never turn into persons condemned by our nation. In 1943, she was captured by a Japanese military police corps and Ben Mu, head of the military police corps, at once gave a banquet" in her honour," trying to win her over and make her surrender. Seeing through his trick, Sun Xiaomei pounded the table and stood up. She cursed the Japanese devils and then turned over the table angrily. Ben Mu flew into a rage out of humiliation. He escorted her to the level ground in the Old Tiger Mountains in Longtan, brutally cut off her breasts first and then killed her. She died at the young age of 29.

Although the captured servicewomen were harshly insulted and victimized by the enemy, often receiving cruel torture after being humiliated again and again, their revolutionary faith was never shaken. Their pursuit of beliefs and goals of life was constantly tempered in their ceaseless exploration. When Feng Helan, a servicewoman of the New Fourth Army, was put into prison, she wrote a letter to her sister to her sister to the effect that her feeble life in prison was being sustained by the bright lamp of hope; that maybe she would die soon and be put to hell, but she was not afraid, because what she had done was to save thousands of millions of masses in miserable conditions; and that she thought she was fortunate to be thrown into hell for the sake of the great masses.

Such epiphany toward life could never have been attained by old-type women..While admiring their heroic revolutionary acts of upholding justice, one couldn't help paying respects to the literary talent they displayed.

A most noble image of life has always been that of the mother. But war left the servicewomen little time to take care of their children. And yet, at the end of their lives, they often revealed the heartbreaking maternal love innate in them.

In the summer of 1936, speeding along on the Japanese-style narrow-gauge rail in the Northeast was a train wherein was escorted a condemned prisoner. She was Zhao Yiman, one of the woman cadets of the Huangpu Military Academy and later the political commissar of the Second Regiment in the Third Army of the Northeast Anti-Japanese Allied Forces. She was unfortunately wounded in a battle and was captured. In the inquesting room, the head of the Japanese special agents personally interrogated her and then inflicted upon her such tortures as belt beating, fire burning and the nailing of fingers with bamboo picks. She kept silent all the way on the hot and suffocating train. Suddenly she spoke: "Give me a pen."

The enemy, thinking that the strong woman had wavered in face of death, hurriedly got ready a pen and a piece of paper. Propping up her weak body, she finished a piece of paper. Propping up her weak body, she finished a piece of writing at one go with her battered hand.

This was a letter to her son.

Aug.2,1936

Ning, my dear son,

It is a great pity that mom didn't discharge her responsibility with regard to your education.

Mom firmly took part in the struggle against the Japanese aggression. Now I am going to die.

Mom will never have a chance to see you again before death. I hope that you, my dear Ning, will grow up as soon as possible so as to console your dead mother. My dearest child, since mom cannot teach you with thousands upon thousands of words, mom will teach you with actual deeds.

I hope that, after you have grown up, you won't forget that your mother died for the country.

Your mother Zhao Yiman in the train

She was gone, leaving her maternal love.

The Yunzhouxi Village of Shanxi Province, a small village which can not be found on the map, is famous throughout the country for having brought up a 16-year-old girl called Liu Hulan, an anti-Japanese

servicewoman. On the execution ground, she didn't say any brave words or perform any earthshaking deeds. She just calmly asked: "How shall I die?" Then she went toward the hand hay cutter with composure. Her head was cut off for public exposure. Many people, including her elders, were deeply moved by the integrity displayed in face of death by the simple girl in the Chinese countryside. People commented upon her with these maximum words; "A great life and a glorious death!"

In 1948, Chiang's imperial court was shaken by the rumble of gunfire of the PLA. It was on the eve of the daybreak. In the concentration camp in Chongqing, the fingers of Jiang Zhujun, a servicewoman, were nailed full with bamboo picks. Then the enemy time and again forced her to drink chili water, sit on the rack and undergo other cruel tortures. And yet, despite the dripping of blood from her hands and the sounding of the heavy shackles on her feet, she broke free of the uncommissioned enemy officers who were holding her on both sides by the arms and stood firmly all by herself. Her fellow sufferers all felt proud of her. They extended their respect for her in various ways. Among them was a poem wherein she was thus praised:

You are the embodiment of Dan Niang,  
You are the spirit of Sophia,  
No, you show your own characters,  
You are the revolutionary model of the sons and daughters of the Chinese people.

## V.Chinese Servicewomen Striding Proudly Forward in the World:

Servicewomen after the Founding of the Republic(1949— )

### 14. Dancing in the Sky with Colored Ribbons: Women in the Air Force

Oct.1,1949 Witnessed the founding of the People's Republic of China.

In 1951, the young Air Force of the Chinese People's Liberation Army recruited the first batch of aviatrixes of New China. The total number was 14. At that time, there were people whispering: "Women are going up to the sky!"

Servicewomen in times of war won peace and victory with their life and blood and achieved their long cherished goal of transforming women from being subservient in the old society to masters of the nation, society and family. Chinese women who had been slaves in domestic circles from generation to generation began to feel proud and elated. "Chinese women can join the army, fight and fight successfully. Why cannot they go up to the sky?"

Servicewomen in times of war won peace and victory with their life and blood and achieved their long cherished goal of transforming women from being subservient in the old society to masters of the nation, society and family. Chinese women who had been slaves in domestic circles from generation to generation began to feel proud and elated. "Chinese women can join the army, fight and fight successfully.Why cannot they go up to the sky?" Such was the reasoning of women then.

On March 8,1952, Zhu De, commander in chief of the PLA, Deng Yingchao, vice-chairwoman of the National Women's Federation, and other leaders of the Party, the Government and the Army came personally to the airport in the western suburbs, and together with over 7.000 women from various walks of life of the Capital, held for the first batch of aviatrixes of China a grand taking-off ceremony.

At one o'clock sharp p.m., the aircraft, in the formation of single planes following one another, flew over Tian'anmen Square for inspection by the people of the country. Just then, Mao Zedong,Who was attending a meeting in the office of Zhongnanhai, came out, and looking up at the sky, said in a mild and humorous tone: "The first batch of aviatrixes have flown by over our heads!"

From then to now, 290 aviatrixes in 6 batches have been up to the sky. They have not only mastered such complex skills as flight, pilotage, communications, engineering, parachute jumping, and glide, some of them have become test pilots, aircraft commanders, and

special-class pilots.

Thirty years ago, a girl student from Tai'an No.1 Middle School of Shandong was selected as one of the third batch of aviatrixes of China. As she was leaving home, her parents, both miners, accompanied their beloved daughter league after league before parting, urging again and again: "Do your best in the armed forces and fly up to the blue skies as soon as possible so as to bring credit to us labouring people and win honour for our homeland!" Keeping her parents' exhortation in mind, the young girl became a special-class pilot and was then promoted to the office of deputy division commander in charge of flying of a certain unit of the air arm of the Air Force. Her name is Yue Xicui. She has piloted successively five types of aircraft, flying safely for over 5,200 hours and covering a distance of close to 2,000,000 kilometres. She has been constantly accompanied by the intensity and hardship of urgent airlift, military maneuvers, scientific experiments, rescue and relief work, artificial raining and a series of other commonly unbearable experiences. In 1978, Yue Xicui, then an aircraft commander, successfully carried out the task of extensive artificial snowing for the first time, filling in a gap in the history of our aeronautical meteorology. In May 1993, leading 3 flight crews, she flew to Shanghai and conducted China's first test of artificial termination of rain.

Behind almost each of the aviatrixes is there a commonly incomparable record. The prices they have paid are also commonly unimaginable. Compared with the vast expanse of the blue skies, human beings are insignificant and lonely. Few of these aviatrixes are talkative. "What to say? What do you want to know?" To each visitor they put such questions. Only when you have chatted with them, and chatted congenially, can you get a smattering of their life in the sky. Liu Huafeng and Li You-e said that there was no toilet on the An-26 that they piloted. men could make do with a bucket, but it was troublesome for women. So they dared not drink water before each flight. Wu Dongzheng and Liu Xiaolian said that, as women, they really felt sad when their children but that they had few opportunities to show love to their children who were kept away from them from childhood on. Wang Chun and Cheng Xiaojian said that they didn't have to fly in their menstrual period according to the rule, but they rarely stuck to this rule. Some of their sisters performed missions even during pregnancy.

"Why?"

"Ask the bus skies."

They loved the blue skies and they loved flying. when forbidden to fly any more, they felt bad indeed. So said the earliest aviatrixes.

They presented to the loved skies not only youth and domestic happiness, some even laid down their lives. Let's bear in mind their

names: Chen Zhiying, Han Shunu, Pan Juanru and Yang Yancai.

Challenging the upper air one batch after another, the aviatrixes have put down one successful record after another on their curriculum vitae and on the dreadful high altitude.

Among the sixth batch of aviatrixes, there was a tall girl by the name of Liu Yuhuan. She thus introduced herself to others: "Both my parents are pilots. They named me Yuhuan (meaning 'space surrounding') so that I could carry on their flying cause. I know that being a pilot means a life of hardships and difficulties, it means the sacrifice of youth, and it means even death. Now that I have taken over my parents' control stick, I'm ready to take over all these."

It is hard to check whether there are other cases of both mother and daughter being aviatrixes in the world, but in China it is certain that there is only one case: Dong Suozhen and Liu Yuhuan. Let's listen to the talk between mother and daughter about soaring in the blue skies from their correspondence:

Dear Mom:

Today is Oct. 21. At this moment you must be blessing your daughter for her 20th birthday. But what I want to tell you is that today, I, being one of the first batch, took a solo flight!

Early in the morning, when you were still in your sweet dream, I was already seated in the cabin. I breathed deeply and calmed my heart which was about to jump out of my chest. "Take off, 109 (code name for my plane)," at last came the word of command through the earphones. I put off the brakes, opened the throttle, and the plane got out of the runway as swift as the wind and as quick as lightning. With the feeling of a shake of the wings and a drop of my body, the plane left the land! At this moment, a strong feeling of happiness and pride suddenly welled up in my mind.

Mom, your daughter, on her 20th birthday, took over the control stick from your hands. Reading this, you must have smiled. Flying up in the clouds, I felt so close to you in my heart and I understood you so deeply. Mom, do you still remember the little girl who, afraid that mom would go and fly, quietly hid away her flying kit? Today she herself, bright and brave, has flown in the blue skies. Mom, having written here, I cannot help shedding some tears, tears of happiness....

Yuhuan, my dear daughter:

Seeing your letter, mom really smiled and shed tears of happiness like you, feeling as if I were soaring in the blue skies like before. Being one of the second batch of aviatrixes of our country in the 50s, mom never dreamed that 35 years later, her only daughter, on her 20th birthday, would fly up in the blue skies like her.

Yet, as a veteran aviatrix, mom now must tell you: never indulge in pride. You must remember that an aviatrix is not a flower to be appreciated by herself or others. Rather she is a fighter up in the air. The motherland has to spend a great deal of money in training a pilot. You must fly better than mom did....

In ancient China there was the story of the Goddess Chang'e flying to the moon. But that was a beautiful legend of oppressed Chinese women seeking freedom. In today's China, dancing in the blue skies with colored ribbons are not only women pilots but also women parachuters.

On Aug. 16, 1987, servicewomen of a certain new recruit training brigade of the parachute landing force succeeded in field parachuting for the first time after the establishment of the organizational system. At 8:30 a.m., with the rise of a green signal flare, the first plane carrying women parachuters rose up to the high altitude of 800 metres. Just then, however, Heaven was not cooperative: post-rain air currents kept tossing the plane about. With the ringing of the preparatory bell for jumping, the girls quickly stood up and did various warming-up exercises in good order. With the sound of a long tick, they, one after another, bravely aimed at the cabin door and leapt out. These women parachuters, coming from 8 provinces and cities of the country, had been, when back home, textile women workers, hotel waitresses, shop assistants, or students just out of the school. Each morning they exercised themselves in a 5 kilometre cross-country race. In the scorching midsummer, they practiced jumping from the aircraft and landing in very high temperature. There was a girl by the name of Wang Lin, who even dared not go outside at night before enlistment. But now she jumped out from the high altitude of 800 metres, meeting the set requirements the very first time. After that, the women parachuters, having completed training in field parachute jumping of 7 different subjects, threw themselves into integrated training and survival training in field operations.

#### 15. Blue Guards: Women in the Navy

On April 23, 1949, the Navy of the Chinese People's Liberation Army was founded. In her ranks could be seen the heroic bearing of servicewomen. But it was not until 42 years after the establishment of this special arm of the services--on March 14, 1991--that it began to have genuine women sailors. The commanding officer and political commissar of the South China Sea Fleet issued orders, appointing Chen Jinfeng and 16 others to form the first batch of women sailors of our armed forces and to take part in anchoring training with the medical ship the Nankang. At daybreak that day, the 17 women sailors lined up



on the deck. "Occupy positions, fight fires, plug holes...." The shouts of the stern captain thus drove this special group of new sailors from the front deck of the ship to the back, from the third-class cabins to the operation room. Force 6 wind caused layers of waves to surge and the ship swayed over 10 degrees. The women sailors felt dizzy as if their heads were splitting. Even drugs for seasickness were of no use. One of them burst out vomiting, and then another followed. Basins, buckets, and the cabins were all covered with traces of vomiting. The vast sea seemed unwilling to accept the Chinese servicewomen. Training to them was little short of being cruel. Like the servicemen, the servicewomen had to drill in every thing and complete all kinds of specialties and joint training subjects. There was no water for baths on the ship and even drinking water was limited. In order to reduce troubles, some women sailors took with them more than a dozen sets of underclothes. Even so they couldn't solve the problem wholly. "Chen Xia, shoot!" ordered the captain. Chen Xia hurriedly held up the submachine gun, but the target simply couldn't be fixed within the ring sight. She fired two shots addleheadedly, threw the gun to a serviceman beside her, and then, with her head in her hands, squatted down by a big pile of anchor lines, waiting to be scolded by the officer on duty. No one came to scold her. Huge waves lifted the ship and people on it were already reeling right and left. Many men sailors vomited so much that their tears came out. Seawater wetted Chen Xia's uniform and short hair. She suddenly stood up and, loading the gun with bullets, aiming, and then shooting, the servicewomen eventually sank the target. During the 15-day anchoring training, the servicewomen often lay awake all night and couldn't eat anything for days on end. Though they were confronted with embarrassment and sufferings hard to bring up, none of them cried. Fifteen days later, people discovered to their surprise that the line of originally fair women sailors were black all over--black eyes, black hair, black complexion--except for their teeth which were white.

Women lucky enough to join the Navy were all to become attached to the great sea. In 1965, a girl from Anhui came alone to the examination room of the PLA Art College located in Nanjing. The artists in charge of the examination were touched by her unaffected and meaningful singing. She was enrolled. Soon she was sent to the South China Sea Fleet of the Navy for training. Working as a telephone serviceman and communicating with sailors wearing striped shirts, she felt the phone line smelt of sea tide. Working as a cook, she ate each meal with the saltiness of seawater. At the same time, she was also attracted by the splendid and deep colour of blue. She became a singer of the Art Troupe of the Political Department of the Navy. Her song, Xisha, Beloved Homeland has warmed the hearts of generations of sailors

on naval vessels. Nurtured by the great sea, she has become a first-class actress of the country. Her name is Bian Xiaozhen. She was unaware that when she was performing in the North China Sea, a little girl off the stage was so attracted that she quietly memorized all the words and music of the songs and chanted silently. In 1985, the little girl's personal albums, *The Wind Says You Are Coming* and *Return, rosy Clouds*, were published and put on sale respectively by the Northern Audio-Visual Publishing Firm and the Chinese Audio and Video Publishing Firm. What was noticeable was that she was also the orchestrator and supervisor of the manufacture of the songs. Her name, together with her songs, has become widely known. She is Fan Linlin. In 1988, this girl, a naval serviceman's daughter whose growth was accompanied by the rhythm of the great sea from childhood on, became a member of the Navy like her father. She and Song Zuying, an actress of the Miao nationality who also became a member of the Navy, raised wave upon wave of songs on naval vessels--floating stage at sea, on islands far from the mainland, and on airports where fighting eagles stopped over. The cheering sailors were reluctant to part from their beloved "singing stars," so much so that greetings from the great sea and border sentry posts followed the singers even back to Beijing. In 1991 and 1994, Fan Linling and Song Zuying visited Thailand and Russia with a naval formation of warships. Saluting in a line on the deck by the side of the ship like the others, they felt an unprecedented sense of pride that suddenly replaced the fatigue of their long journey. In the hearts of foreign friends, overseas Chinese and officers and men of the friendly foreign forces, they left the Chinese sailors' artistic images and their songs imbued with the rich flavour of the ocean. Their names, together with those of several dozen other excellent actresses of the whole armed forces, have been ranked among the first-class performers of the motherland. But the joys and sorrows of long voyages on the warships have been printed like patents in their unique life journeys.

#### 16. Pride of the Servicewomen: Women Generals

In 1995 the Chinese armed forces instituted the system of military ranks.

At the rank-conferring ceremony in Huairan Hall of Zhongnanhai, Beijing, Red Armywoman Li Zhen, previously a child bride, was promoted because of her illustrious military exploits to the rank of general, the first woman general in China.

In 1998 the Chinese armed forces reinstated the system of military ranks.

Five women officers, including Nie Li, constituted the first group

of women generals promoted after the reinstatement. In 1993, Nie Li was promoted to the rank of lieutenant general and became the first woman lieutenant general in the world. By now, there are already 13 women generals in the Chinese armed forces. This is a line-up that has attracted worldwide attention and has become the pride of Chinese servicewomen.

Li Zhen was born in the village of Xiaobanqiao of Hunan Province in Feb. 1908; joined the revolutionary ranks in the spring of 1926 and became a member of the CPC in March 1927; in Sept. of the same year participated in the Autumn Harvest Uprising; soon afterwards, assumed the post of chairwoman of the Soldiers' Committee of Liudong Guerrilla Forces and chairwoman of the Presidium of the Soviet Executive Committee of Liuyang County; in the winter of 1930 became director of the Military Affairs Department and concurrently secretary of the Women's Committee of Pingjiang County; in the winter of 1931 became secretary of the Women's Committee of Xiang-Gan Provinces; in the winter of 1932 became political commissar of the Women's Group of the Xiang-gan Military Command and dean of the Political Department of the Red Army School of the Xiang-Gan Military Command; in Nov. 1934 became director of the Organization Department of the 6th Army Group under the Red Army; in Nov. 1935 took part in the Long March and became deputy director and acting director of the Organization Department of the 2nd Front Red Army ; during the War of Resistance Against Japan and the War of Liberation served successively as principal of Women's School of the Eighth Route Army, director of the Political Section directly under the 120th Division, chief of the Organization Section of the Organization Department of the Shan-Gan-Ning-Jin-Sui Joint Forces, secretary-general of the Political Department of the Jin-Sui Military Command, and secretary-general of the Political Department of the Northwestern Field Army; during the War to Resist U. S. Aggression and Aid Korea served as secretary-general of the Political Department of the Chinese People's Volunteers; after returning home in 1953, served successively as director of the Department of Cadres under the Political Department of the Air Defense Forces of the Military Commission, deputy public procurator-general of the Military Procuratorate of the PLA, and advisor to the Organization Department under the General Political Department, etc.

Almost all of the 13 women generals promoted after 1988 have a high educational background. Moreover, the majority of them are generals promoted to cadres in charge from scientists or officers of professional techniques.

Lieutenant general Nie Li, formerly deputy director of and now advisor to the Science and Technology Committee under the Commission of Science, Technology and Industry for National Defense, was born in

Sept. 1930 in Sichuan, joined the CPC in March 1950 and in 1960 graduated from the Leningrad Precision Machinery and Optical Instrument College in the former Soviet Union. Since returning home, Nie has worked in the national defense scientific research department. Numerous brilliant scientific research achievements are closely associated with her name, including the oceangoing telemetering ship, the Yuanwang, which carried out the survey of synchronous communications satellite tracking parameters in the South Pacific; the research and development of our country's general-purpose super computer the Galaxy; and numerous military-related electronic technology projects. Beginning from the second half of the 80's, she has also served as vice chairwoman of the National Women's Federation, a member of the Standing Committee of the Fourth Scientific and Technological Association in China, a senior member of the Electronics Institute, and deputy director of the Chinese Women Scientific and Technological Workers' Federation. She is also a member of the Standing Committee, a member of the Internal Affairs and Judicial Commission, and head of the Special Group on Women and Children of the 8th National People's Congress. She was promoted to the rank of major general in 1988 and to lieutenant general in 1993.

Major general Liao Wenhai, president of the General Hospital of the PLA, was born in May 1934 in Shanghai, joined the army from Chengdu in Dec. 1950 and graduated from Shenyang Medical College in 1956. At the age of 28 she was appointed as the head physician, and became deputy director of the department wherein she worked at the age of 36. She assumed the office of vice-president of the hospital in 1983 and president in 1988. The hospital under her management is the largest one in the whole army. It has 1,500 beds and over 4,000 staff members. The Military Postgraduate Medical College is attached to it. The hospital's daily volume of outpatients amounts to over 3,000 people. She is a deputy to the 13th and 14th National Congress of the CPC and an alternate member of the 13th and 14th Central Committee of the CPC. In 1988 she was promoted to the rank of major general.

Major general Hu Feipei, the former vice-president of the Foreign Languages Institute of the PLA, was born in 1930 in Shanghai, joined the army in 1949, and graduated from Fudan University in Shanghai in 1949. After that she became an English teacher and taught in many different places. In 1983 she assumed the office of deputy director of the college training department and vice-president of the college in 1987. In 1993 she was granted a first-class army-level award for excellent teaching achievements in army colleges and schools because of her accomplishment of the "Monumental Breakthroughs in Basic English Training." In 1988 she was promoted to the rank of major general.

Major general Wu Xiaoheng, the former vice-president of the First Military Medical University, was born in 1932 in Hubei, joined the army in 1950 and graduated from Harbin Medical University. In the early 80's, when she served as director of the Internal Medicine Department of the Southern Hospital attached to the University, she assisted the president in supervising a comprehensive reform in the medical and logistical work of the first overseas Chinese-oriented hospital Huiqiaolou. In 1983 she was appointed to the post as vice-president of the First Military Medical University and assumed responsibility for scientific research work. Correct Use of the Theory of Science and Technology Constituting the First Productive Force to Promote the Development of Colleges and Universities and a dozen other important articles written by her, articles exploring and reflecting the subject of vitalizing colleges through science and technology have been published successively in magazines like China's Higher Education. In 1990 the medical university won 2 first-class awards for achievements in science and technology at the army level and the number of second-class awards won that year tripled that when she just assumed office. In 1988 she was promoted to the rank of major general.

Major general Li Xikai, the former vice-president of the Third Military Medical University, was born in April 1932 in Beijing, joined the army in Sept. 1950, and graduated from the Mid-China Medical College in 1956. After working for 5 years she was appointed as the head Physician. More than 30 research papers and the scientific monograph Advances in Studies of Heart Failure she has written marks her status in the field of cardiology. In 1983 she was promoted to the position as president of the No. 2 Hospital attached to the Third Military Medical University and to Vice-president of the university in 1986. The laboratory of quality control of hospital infection established under her supervision, junior medical workers' continuous medical education after graduation, and quality control of clinical postgraduate students were all innovative and creative attainments she made after assuming the leadership post. She is also included in 500 Outstanding Chinese Women. In 1988 she was promoted to the rank of major general.

Major general Qiao Peijuan, the former political commissar of the PLA Art Institute, was born in 1932, joined the army in 1947, and graduated first from the Department of opera of the Central Theatrical Institute in 1953 and then in 1963 from the Shanghai Vocal Music Research Institute, where she majored in vocal music. She has played in succession the leading characters in more than 20 operas such as The Marriage of Xiao Er Hei and The White-Haired Girl. In 1979 she was promoted to the position as associate political commissar and then political commissar of the Song and Dance Ensemble of the PLA General

Political Department. She took up the post of vice-president in 1988 and of political commissar in 1992 of the PLA Art Institute, being chiefly responsible for artistic creation, academic research and ideological work. She is a member of the Chinese Musicians' Association, a member of the Chinese Dramatists' Association and an executive director of the Chinese Pharyngeal Institute. In 1990 she was promoted to the rank of major general.

Major general Zhao Zhiwen, the former vice-president of the Institute of International Relations of the PLA, was born in 1935 in Zhejiang, joined the army in 1951, and graduated from the Foreign Languages Institute of the PLA in 1956. In 1981 she got a master's degree from San Francisco University of America. She has taught respectively in the Foreign Languages Institute of the PLA, the East China Normal University in Shanghai, the Institute of International Relations of the PLA and some other places. Demand for the textbook Practical English Communications Grammar compiled by her as a result of her 30-year rich experience in teaching and research far exceeds supply even though the book has been released in the sixth edition. A one million-character book The Modern English Communications Guidebook will soon come out. In 1990 she was promoted to the rank of major general.

Major general Peng Gang, director of the Discipline Inspection Department under the General Political Department, was born in Nov. 1938 in Hunan, joined the army in Aug. 1959, and graduated from the Northwest Military Telecommunications Engineering College in Aug. 1965. She became an engineer of a research institute of the Meteorological Bureau under the Headquarters of the General Staff in 1979 and in 1980 became an engineer and then director of the Automation Research Section of Command and Management under the Headquarters of the General Logistics Department. In 1985 she was appointed associate director and then director of the cadre department under the General Political Department of the General Logistics Department. In 1988 she was appointed Vice-secretary of the Discipline Inspection Commission under the General Logistics Department. From July 1990 she began to serve as associate director and then director of the Discipline Inspection Department under the General Political Department. She is a member of the 13th Central Discipline Inspection Commission, a member of the Standing Committee of the 14th Central Discipline Inspection Commission, deputy secretary of the Discipline Inspection Committee of the Central Military Commission and a member of the Party committee of the General Political Department. In 1991 she was promoted to the rank of major general.

Major general Deng Xianqun, director of the Mass Work Department under the General Political Department of the PLA, was born in Dec.

1935 in Sichuan and joined the CPC in 1961. She has a college education background. From Oct. 1957 to 1959 she worked in the Education Bureau of the Xicheng District in Beijing; and from Aug. 1959 to 1962 she studied in the Harbin Military Engineering College. After graduation she worked in succession in different institutes and departments of the National Defense Ministry, the Navy and the Second Artillery Troops, etc. From Feb. 1991 she began to work Department under the General Political department. In 1992 she was promoted to the rank of major general.

Major general He Jiasheng, director of the Research Department of the Military Encyclopedia of the Academy of Military Science, was born in Nov. 1935 in Hunan, joined the army in 1950 and has worked in succession as assistant teacher, editor, journalist, and director of the Compilation and Research Section of the General Political Department. The reading and editing of China's Military Encyclopedia led by He Jiasheng was an important task assigned by the Central Military Commission in 1984. The effort involved the compilation of over 11,000 entries covering 58 subjects in seven categories, including 8,000 diagrams, and totaling more than 16 million characters. Well over 5,000 experts and scholars, both inside and outside the army, participated in the compilation effort. When completed, the work became the first exemplary encyclopedia representing the level of military science in China. He Jiasheng is the under secretary-general of the Military Science Institute and has been enrolled as a member of the Chinese Writers' Association and the Chinese Film Artists' Association. In 1992 she was promoted to the rank of major general.

Major general Wang Xiaotang, director of the August First Film Studio, was born in Jan. 1934 in Jiangsu, joined the army in 1952 and is a first-class film actress of the country. In 1958 she won a young actors' award at the Eleventh Karlovy Vary International Film Festival for her playing the female protagonist in Beacon-fire in a Stockaded Border Village. Her excellent performance in many films resulted in her becoming one of the 22 film stars authorized by the Cultural Ministry of the People's Republic of China in the early 60's. She has some very original views of art and phonetics. Her monograph on phonetics was serialized in Hongkong's Dagongbao and her monograph on art was serialized in Film Art. From 1988 she began to serve as deputy director and then director of the August First Film Studio. She is a member of the National Art Association, a director of the Chinese Film Artists' Association, a director of China's International Cultural Exchanges Center, a deputy to the 14th National Congress of the CPC and a committee member of the 8th National Committee of the C.P.P.C.C. In 1993 she was promoted to the rank of major general.

Major general Zhong Yuzheng, an analytical chemistry professor at

the Basic Courses Department of the PLA Antichemical Warfare Command Engineering Institute under the Headquarters of the General Staff, was born in 1930 in Guangdong and joined the army in 1950. She studied in succession in the Medical Department of the National Central University in Nanjing, the Chemical Department of the Jingling Women's Liberal Arts and Science College in Nanjing, the Chemical Servicemen's School of the Chinese People's Liberation Army, and the Chemical Department Of Beijing University. She has also taught in succession in the Chemical Department of Beijing University, the Chemical Servicemen's School, the 6th Department of the Harbin military Engineering College and the Antichemical Warfare Command Engineering Institute. She is the only woman general working in the special technology sector of the PLA. From 1991 on, Zhong has three times led a delegation of China's Chemical experts to the second, third and fourth rounds of verification and comparison experiments organized by the Special Committee for Chemical Weapons under the United Nations Disarmament Commission. In 1993 she was promoted to the rank of major general.

Major general Zhao Fuhuan, vice-president of the Academy of Military Medical Science, was born in Nov. 1942 in Tianjin and graduated from Tianjin Medical College in 1965. In the 70's she started fairly early domestic studies of viruses in water, was in charge of and completed studies of microorganisms in water, such as the effect evaluation index of sterilizing viruses in water with F2 bacteriophage and its concentration check method. In the 80s, during her tenure of office of director of the Environmental Medicine Research Institute of Hygienics of the Academy, Zhao Fuhuan was in charge of and completed studies on bacteria monitor cabinets of the armed forces' water quality, measures of applied techniques for improvement of the armed forces' drinking water, and microorganism monitor cabinets of the armed forces' food. She was awarded for four times respectively prizes for progress in science and technology at the army and national levels. Altogether she has written 32 theses and one monograph Armed Forces Water-Supply Hygienics. She is a director of the Chinese Preventive Medicine Association and a director of the Chinese Microorganism Association. In 1994 she was promoted to the rank of major general.

#### 17. Casters of the Shield of National Peace: Servicewomen on the Battlefield of Scientific Research on National Defense

One day in 1988, people at a certain satellite launching test cite of our country discovered that Chen Lishan, a woman engineer responsible for the software program composition of the satellite, had fallen asleep under a desk. She had spent another whole night tackling



key problems. On the desk were program charts placed in good order. As many as 10,000 commands contained therein had been designed for our country's first meteorological satellite. Chen's husband asked in solicitude: "Don't you want to live any more the way you work?" Rubbing her swelling eyes, Chen Lishan tried to smile to him, but was too exhausted to do so. Though she was not a general, the software programs she composed successfully "commanded" the tracking and measuring of 13 satellite and rocket launchings, including the Asia I, and the Long March II Strap-on Rocket. Of the 6 software programs the composition of which she took part in and supervised, 4 won prizes. The place where these achievements were attained is an out-of-the-way mountain area far away from big cities.

There is a whole group of servicewomen who, like Chen Lishan, are possessed of knowledge, ideals and beliefs.

In 1840 imperialists knocked open China's gate with opium and firearms. The hundred-year modern history was one of humiliation and oppression to the Chinese people. Now that they have stood up, they must cast anti-aggression shields so as to protect their territory against encroachment. To this end, a number of outstanding scientists gathered in the field of military science. Among them were a group of young girls, who have now grown into leaders in their chosen fields of learning with innumerable great achievements.

According to incomplete statistics, since 1985, women scientific and technical workers in the Chinese armed forces have been awarded more than 3,000 prizes for achievements in scientific research. Among the whole armed forces' 322 projects that have won third prizes and above at the national level, 183 have involved participation by women scientific and technical workers. Among these they were foremost researchers in 25 projects and chief researchers in 83 projects.

In Oct. 1964, China successfully detonated its first atomic bomb. After that, guided missiles, satellites and other kinds of high-tech equipment were developed. This process meant both a challenge by the intellectuals of our country to the poor and blank industrial basis left by Old China and a long life journey of these intellectuals of our country to the poor and blank industrial basis left by Old China and a long life journey of these intellectuals who chose of their own free will the hard mountain areas where they devoted selflessly their youth and knowledge to the motherland. Hua Ming, a woman researcher, accumulating the theory and practice of field nuclear tests gained through her engagement for over 30 years, fairly systematically summarized the phenomenon and pattern of nuclear explosion in high altitude, provided rich data and theoretical basis for studies of nuclear science, and filled in our country's gaps in the data of nuclear explosion effect. Such studies supervised by her as research on

systematic radioflash, research on satellite radiation environment, and the world tracking technique "high-power microwave technique" have won 2 first awards, 2 second awards, 1 fourth award, and 6 fifth awards. At the time when cities in China are making great strides forwards in decorating themselves with neon lights, imported cars and expressways, the scientific research base in the remote mountain area still keeps its silence just as in the past. Just when the present book draft was about to be sent to the printers, the people there sent a piece of news: the accelerator named "Flash II" reached advanced standards of foreign products of the same kind. So far it has played an important role in nuclear applications and other high- and new-technology research. Moreover, it has brought about obvious social benefits. The person who attained this achievement is Qiu Aici, a woman scientist who has been engaged for several decades in the studies of pulse power technique and high-current pulse electron-beam accelerator.

There are groups of resplendent stars in the areas of China's military science. Each of the constellations indicative of the female sex shines out with its unique brilliancy.

Zhang Shufeng, a chief engineer in the technical section of Xi'an Satellite Observing and Controlling Center, has taken part in over 20 tasks of satellite and guided missile launching and testing. Corresponding to her qualifications and record of service are more than 20 items of technical transformation and improvement, 6 of which won awards for achievements in science and technology. He Huiwan, the first woman missile expert of the Tujia nationality in our country, has been selected a director of the Chinese Space Science Association four times running for her accomplishment of over 20 theses. Wang Ju, a chief engineer in a certain research institute of the Second Artillery Troops, was one of the first batch of graduates majoring in computational mathematics in the 50's in our country. More than 30 years have slipped by, in the course of which Wang Ju has won successively 6 awards for achievements in science and technology at the national or army level, becoming one of our country's experts in the computation and design of the set of data of strategic missile trajectories. She has been honoured as the "Goddess" who arms the missiles with brain and eyes.

In today's world, what constitutes the index of comprehensive strength is science and technology rather than arms and gunboats. The strength of science and technology lies in people of talent. By 1992, professional and technical women cadres in the whole armed forces of China accounted for 93% of the total women cadres. Of these, those with intermediate professional and technical posts made up 23.1% whereas those with high-level professional and technical posts made up 3.2%.

This is a qualitative change of the Chinese servicewomen in its entirety whose chief status in the 20's of this century was still that

of the child bride. Times do change! The change is indicative not only of the transformation of the Chinese army from one of physical agility to one of brain power but also of the stride forward of the cadres in the Chinese armed forces towards becoming knowledgeable and professional.

In the 80's, when the defense ministers of China and the U.S. began to exchange views on space technology contacts, there wasn't yet in China any satellite testing building with above a 10,000-grade purity. The task was given to a woman officer, senior engineer Lin Shuyun. Fully aware that this project was the crux of the matter in China's entering the international spaceflight market, Lin, relying on her work experience of many years, blazed new trails and fulfilled all the designing tasks with high quality in a short period of only four months. This was a project unique in Asia: the total floorage was 6,200 square meters, with 3 testing halls. Of these, the main hall was 42 meters long, 18 meters wide, and 18 meters high, with a 100,000-grade air-conditioning purity and a blast intensity of 220,000 cubic metres per hour. In the past 20 years or so, Lin Shuyun has taken part in the construction of about a dozen key projects of national defense, supervised and completed over 40 project designing tasks, 2 of which won respectively a silver prize for excellent projects and a second prize for progress in science and technology at the national level, a first prize for excellent projects awarded by the Science and Industry Commission.

One deep night of whirling snow in midwinter of 1991, a woman professor of the Defense Science and Technology University in Changsha fell down on the ground, which resulted in the splintered fracture of her right wrist. The next day, she was seen entering the machine room again with her bandaged hand. She was Professor Li Xiaomei, who took the lead in developing and exploiting the meteorological application software system of the Galaxy II. The injured right hand didn't stop her from leading the members of the task group in putting forward the parallel algorithm plan which was up to internationally advanced standards. They carried out in the shortest possible time a set of incredible technical plans, shortening the runtime of the Galaxy II in making a day's weather forecast to 413 seconds, which was far below the 1,100 seconds set in the contract. Professor Li is a great master in the studies of the theory and application of super-scale computer parallel algorithm and in the super-scale computer application software system. She has won successively an individual prize of the order of first prizes for progress in science and technology at the national level, and individual second prize of the order of special-grade prizes for achievements in science and technology awarded by the Military Commission, 2 first prizes, 4 second prizes,

6 third prizes at the ministerial and commission levels, and individual first prize of the order of prizes for significant scientific researches and experiments in science and technology at the national level and 1 first prize awarded by the Guanghai Foundation. She has published 3 monographs, with a total of 1.5 million characters and has been a mentor to 14 graduate students. In addition, she is director of the Parallel Algorithm Specialized Council under the Computational Mathematics Branch of the Chinese Mathematics Association, vice-president of the mathematics Software Society of the Chinese Software Trade Society, and a member of the International Industry and Applied Mathematics Association.

People have presented to Liu Miqun, daughter from a family of commanders, such heroic lines as "My bow like a full moon, and aiming northwest, I will shoot down the fierce Wolf from out the sky" so as to praise her for her contributions to the development of surface-to-air missiles of the Air Force. This is not just because she and her comrades successfully developed a new high-energy liquid fuel in 7 years, after 17 tests and improvements. Moreover it is because she displayed a courageous and resolute spirit of defying death during the actual application of the fuel. Once, in the course of a test, the heads of two missiles broke off and the payloads failed to detonate. The cause were found. By that time night had fallen over the boundless Gobi Desert and no one could be certain about the exact place where the missiles had fallen. With the payloads were the detonators which might ignite at any moment. Yet Liu Miqun insisted upon going to look for the bodies herself. She went at the risk of her life, found the missile bodies and reached the correct conclusion.

There was a number of military scientists who did their work in accordance with the change of the weather. When it was coldest, they worked among the northernmost troops; when it was hottest, they worked among the southernmost troops. Their average age was the same the southernmost troops. Their average age was the same as that of the young servicemen's fathers. Yet they worked and drilled together with the young soldiers despite the harsh conditions. Their goal was to lighten the servicemen's load in circumstances of marches and operations. Each day, they got up earlier than the soldiers to go to the dining room to check the calories in the food; yet they went to bed later than the soldiers so as to work out the day's data. After 3 scorching summers and freezing winters, Individual Load Standard of the Chinese People's Liberation Army came into being in 1986. It set scientifically the servicemen's optimum load during marches and operations and carried the function of theoretical guidance in lightening individual load. Not only did the scientists have to reduce the soldiers' load, they also had to let

the different parts of the latter's bodies share rationally their outfit load. Another 3 years went by ,and they succeeded in developing XZJ 91 Kit Carried by Individuals, thus bringing an end to the history of "binding with ropes and belts" during servicemen's marches. The No. 1 performer and supervisor of these scientific research items is Liu Ximei, a woman scientist and senior engineer. Working together with her in the Military Supplies Equipment Research Institute was another outstanding woman by the name of Jiang Zhihua,an expert in techniques of garment function checking.In fulfilling the item Productive Technology If Hot Melt Bonding Flocculi and Hot Melt Bonding Machine , she undertook all by herself the design,drawing and installation of the whole control system of electrical appliances. At the same time whdn they were awarded a first prize for progress in science and technology both at the national and army levels, they enabled Chinese of innumerable families to wear for the first time cold-resistant garments made of noncotton warm flocculi. When Jiang Zhihua and her colleahues tested with the most primitive method the warmthkeeping drrect of individual garments in Daxing'anling in the depth of winter, a bolder plan was working in her mind :the plan of simulated testing with computers. The test of "78-1 warm dummy" wherein she supervised the study and design of the hardware control sytem proved successful. Then its second-generation product, the "87 poikilothermal warm dummy," successfully system in achieving quick data acquisition speed, high control accuracy and good system stability. This was a set of automatic control equipment of simulated test of heatexchange process between the human body and environment and could simulate the warmth-keeping property of garments of real human groups in both static and dynamic states in low-temperature circumstances, thus providing for various kinds of garment, winter garments in particular, studying and testing means with comprehensive functions. It furnished not only a series of data and bases for the study, production and outfit of the Chinese armed forces'87 serial winter garments and civil oil-field protective clothing for the Chinese exploration in the South Pole, danger-escape clothing for naval submaromers, and North Pole clothing for the American troops. Moreover, based on the research fruits of the shole system, National Standard of Cold-Resistant and Warmth- Keeping Requirements for Labour Protective Clothing was also formulated.

Associated with the naval navigation light and ship anticorrosive paint was also a woman's name. She was Sa Benmao,a senior engineer of the 4805 Plant of the Novy .In the past 30 years or so ,she has accomplished successively 63 scientific research items and published 67 scientific papers and final experiment reports, of which 2 filled in the gaps of the nation, 3 were awarded prizes for significant achievements in scientific research during the National Conference on

Science in 1978. The ethyne cleaning agent for navigation lights to have an operation life 36 times as long as that of foreign products of the same kind . The use of brush indium coating liquid in ship mechanical repair could save for the country up to RMB 1,000,000 yuan each year. Now she is over 60 years old ,but she still remembers that the first time she accepted the task of developing ethyne cleaning agent she was only 28.

In the initial stage of its establishment, the Academy of Military Science had fewer than 10 women ,who were chiefly engaged in translation and the sorting out of material. Now , however,women research workers can be found in almost all the major disciplines of the academy,such as studies of strategies, studies of campaigns, studies of military systems, studies of military histories, studies of military encyclopedias, and analytical studies of military planning and management. They account for 9.2% of the total number of the scientific research personnel of the academy . Xu Xiaojun, engaged in the studies of military strategies, has published works and translations of over 200 million characters, has won for many times first-class and second-class awards for excellent papers at the army level and has won a third class award for achievements in military scientific research at the army level. Her papers have been included respectively in *New Developments in the Theories of Campaigns in the Soviet and American Military Forces* , *New Investigations into Tactical Developments* , *Investigations on Sun Zi's Victories*, and *21st-Century Asia; Strategic Adjustment*. She also participated in the composition of such monographs as *On Mao Zedong's Military Strategies* and *On High-Tech Wars* and in the translation of *Sun Zi Warfare* into French. Liu Xiaoying, a research fellow on foreign military affairs, is a mentor to graduate students . Among the major military monographs the translation and proof of which she participated in are *The Decisive Campaigns of the Second World War*, *Guide to Modern Wars* , *Military Strategies*, *Commanders* as well as some other books and material , all of which totals over 200 million characters; among the military monographs the compilation of which she participated in are *A General View of the Strengthening of Foreign Military Qualities*, *Research on Foreign Rapid Response Forces* and *A General View of Foreign Reserve Forces* .Liu's academic attainments have won many prizes for scientific research achievements awarded by the state or the Academy of Military Science.

It is in the field of military medicine that the PLA has the greatest number of women scientists and the biggest concentration of achievements. Shen Peifen, a research fellow at the Preclinical Medical Science , won 2 first-class army-level awards for progress in science and technology as a result of her Production of Antihuman T<sub>H</sub> Monoclonal

Antibody and Research on the Immune Typing of Lymphocytic Leukemia with Monoclonal Antibody. Four other achievements of hers won respectively second-class or third-class awards for achievements in science and technology. Thus she has become one of the most outstanding women scientists.

There is another woman scientist by the name of Huang Cui fen who, in 1950, embarked upon a freighter with her husband at great risks, drifted over 50 days at sea and thus returned home from the U.S. after going through all kinds of hardships and difficulties. Together with her husband she set up the microorganism teaching and research section and pharmacology teaching and research section and donated the payment for Bacteriology and Pharmacology she compiled to the country for its War to Resist U.S. Aggression and Aid Korea. In the 50's, the tetragenous toxoid for war injuries, the gas gangrene toxoid she developed and some other achievements of hers filled in domestic gaps. During the ten-years turmoil, despite the grievances and tribulations she and her family suffered, she supervised key scientific research items of national defense, which reached advanced international standards in chief indices and won awards tremendous achievements at the National Conference on Science. In the early 80's, in order to master techniques in genetic engineering as soon as possible, she went to Washington, America for visit and research in the name of going to visit relatives at her own expense. This elderly Chinese professor was seen to arrive at the laboratory each day about one hour earlier than the others, eat what she brought with her for lunch—two pieces of bread and an apple, and yet stand each day at the experiment table for 10 hours on end. Six months went by, in the course of which she participated in and accomplished 2 scientific research items and published 2 papers. She brought back to the motherland and handed over to her work unit 10,000 American dollars worth of experimental instruments and reagents given as a gift to her by her American colleagues. After returning home, she established over 20 new techniques and methods in the research on genetic engineering, thus creating conditions for the research and development of relevant vaccines and biological products. In 1984, she was conferred the title of "Model Scientific Worker" by the Central Military Commission.

Peng Liyuan, a soprano singer of the Song and Dance Ensemble of the General Political Department and a national first-class performer, is ranked among these many scholars because she was the first in China to obtain a Master's degree in national vocal music singing performance. By the time she decided to enter college again for advanced studies, she was not only a famous actress who acted the leading role in the opera White Haired Girl, but had also won a gold

award in the National Competition of Singing Performance of Vocal Music Works by Nie Er and Xian Xinghai in 1985 and the first place of the professional group with national performance in the Second National Young Singers' Grand Tv Prix in 1986. When she made a scientific study of the traditional Chinese singing performance, people once again had a taste of her vision and talent. In 1989 she won a "gold record" award and a "broadcasting gold song" award at the 40th anniversary of the founding of the Republic. In 1990 she won the title of the Second National Film and TV Ten Best Singers and in 1994 won a gold award and gold singing award at the '94 Flower City Cup China's MTV Grand Competitions. Since 1990 she has held successfully recitals and singing performances respectively in Beijing, Shanghai, Guangzhou and Singapore and has become one of the most successful singers in China.

The women scientists have not only attained scientific and technological achievements but are also people of action bold in developing the research findings. In May 1992, Xiao Wenbin, director of the Poison and Medicaments Research Institute of the Academy of Military Medical Science, shouldered also the heavy responsibility of director of the Beijing Fourth Ring Pharmaceutical Factory. Confronted with the fierce competitions by several thousand domestic and foreign pharmaceutical enterprises, she and her colleagues established the development system of merging the factory and the institute into an organic whole, with each backing the other. Xiao originated the "Fourth Ring Model" of one institute, two systems with a unified goal; operation through division of labour with unified leadership; use of personnel with unified allocation; distribution of profits with unified coordination and similar methods of science and enterprise complementing each other. Within a year of its setting up, the factory made the miracle of Per-capita sales income of 820,000 yuan, total profit tax of 27.41 million yuan, and tax payment delivered to the state of 8 million yuan. Its comprehensive indexes in the year ranked the seventh among the 20 powerful enterprises in Beijing's new technique industrial development experimental areas.

The contributions and sacrifices of the women scientists fighting in the field of military scientific research are doublefold. For quite a long time in the past, for the sake of national safety, experts engaged in military science were required to conceal their identities over a long period of time. Thus the achievements of the women scientists and they themselves became rarely known "secrets". In 1986, "Medical Prevention of Injuries by Special Weapons in Wartime" appeared glorieously in the ranks of special-grade awards for progress in science and technology at the national level. This was the fruit of a 27-year effort by scientific research personnel of the Academy of Military Medical Science. It contained 124 achievements. Of these



the antidotes had been tried out successively by over 3,000 people. In 1986 when I was gathering material within this formerly "mysterious" compound, woman scientist XU Qinhui told me that on her two legs there were still two scars ,a keepsake left by the trial of an ointment. At that time she was just graduated from college and was in her early twenties. She still clearly remembered that when the ointment was applied, blisters as big as copper coins appeared in her skin and caused her so much pain that she was unable to sleep for several nights. The woman scientist also said jokingly: "When we have a grandson in the future and he asks about the scars, we'll tell him that these are scars of glory left on his grandpa and grandma in the earlier years." The new anti-toxin drugs and appliances thus came into birth in their hands. Another 10 years has nearly gone by. I'm not sure whether XU Qinhui has got a grandson or not, but I know that the years when scientists had to contribute gratuitously their bodies and lives are gone forever. I also know that today, when the tide of commodities is surging ahead, there are still many Xu Qinhuis of those years who, just as in the past, are cultivating the land of scientific research of national defense and casting meticulously the shield of national peace.

#### 18. Chinese Servicewomen Marching towards the World Arena

On Christmas Day of 1919, the 19-year-old Cai Chang embarked at Shanghai on a French mail liner which, after crossing the Indian Ocean and the Suez Canal, entered the Mediterranean and landed at Marseilles. Thus after a 35-day journey at sea, Cai began her career of studying abroad. No one could imagine that this ordinary Hunan girl could eventually become a prominent figure in the circles of Chinese women and exercise her influence in world affairs. Whether Cai Chang herself had ever dreamt of this we don't know. But when 28 years later Cai Chang headed from the Northeast for Prague, the capital of Czechoslovakia, to attend the Prague Council of the International Democratic Women's Federation, a new historic era began: for the first time the Preparatory Committee of the Women's Federation in China's Liberated areas put up an appearance upon the world arena.

The International Democratic Women's Federation was established in France on Dec. 1, 1945 at the suggestion of women representatives from 41 states, including the Soviet Union, France, Britain and the United States. Its goal was to unite women all over the world to strive for the elimination of fascism and for world peace and democracy. The Council agreed that the Women's Federation in China's Liberated areas could recommend two regular and one alternate members to the council. In April 1946, the organizations in the various Liberated areas elected Cai Chang and Deng Yingchao to be regular members and Ding Ling an

alternate member. In May, the International Democratic Women's Federation invited Deng Yingchao by telegram to attend the council to be held in Paris on June 27. but Deng failed to go because of obstructions by the Kuomintang government. At the conference in 1947, Cai Chang gave a talk "titled Chinese Women Striving for Independence, Democracy and Peace". The International Women's Federation decided to send by post the full text of Cai Chang's talk to each of the American women's organizations and to send a letter to Mrs. Roosevelt and the American women's organizations to call for their support to the Chinese women in their movement for peace and democracy. From Dec.1 to Dec.6, 1948, the Second Congress of the International Democratic Women's Federation was held in Budapest, the capital of Hungary. The Chinese Women's Delegation headed by Cai Chang, taking with them pictures, diagrams and products showing the life and struggle of women in the liberated areas, participated in the congress. Members of the delegation included Zhang Qiuqin, Qu Mengjue, Li Wenyi, Ding Ling, Li Landing and 7 others. Cai Chang gave a talk titled "On the Development of Women's Democratic Movement in Asian Countries". Mrs. Gordon, Chairwoman of the International Democratic Women's Federation, praised the Chinese revolution and Chinese women again and again in her talk. She said: "Ms, Cai Chang from China is an organizer and fighter of the Women's Movement in China's liberated areas. She is a great heroine. She stands for New China, whose gradual progress is a great inspiration to us." The congress elected Cai Chang vice-chairwoman, Cai Chang, Deng Yingchao, He Xiangning and Li Dequan regular members of the council, Xu Guangping, Lu Cui and Ding Ling alternate members of the council, Cai Chang, Deng Yingchao and He Xiangning regular members of the executive committee, and Li Dequan and Lu Cui alternate members of the executive committee. The congress made the decision that in 1949 the liberated China was to hold a conference on Asian women.

In 1949, the conference was held in China as scheduled. For the first time Cai Chang and the other Chinese delegates supervised the conference as hosts in power, thus opening another historic page for the women of China, who were marching towards the world arena in their brand new posture. By the time the Chinese service-women appeared again on the world arena, the face they put up was already apolitical.

Before us is a dazzling stage whose mercury lamps shine stingily only upon the world-class players. Even so, there is too much for the eye to feast upon in the formation where the Chinese servicewomen stand. In the front row of the servicewomen's formation are young athletes and artists who visit the world as messengers of peace and who, in the fair competitions with players of various countries, have won one dazzling gold medal after another for the motherland and the Chinese

servicewomen. In 1963, Li Shulan broke the world women's archery record. By 1966 Li had, for 17 times in succession, broken 8 world women's archery records.

In 1975, during the shooting competitions of the Third National Games, Li Yamin, Dong Xiangyi and Du Ningsheng broke respectively with the scores of 591, 587 and 588 points the world women's record of shooting with small-bore pistols. By 1978 they had for 4 times in succession broken the world record for this event in domestic and international shooting competitions.

In 1979, Ma Yanhong won the women's uneven bars championship at the 20th World Gymnastics Championships; in 1984 she won again the women's uneven bars championship of the 23rd Olympics Games.

In 1979, Gao Qing, at the women's 60-cartridge slowly accelerating shooting competition with small-bore standard pistols, broke the world record with a score of 593 points.

In 1981, Tong Ling won the women's singles title at the 36th World Table Tennis Championships.

In 1983, Shen Jianping and Dai Lili won the women's doubles title at the 37th World Table Tennis Championships.

In 1985, Dai Lili and Gang Lijuan, a player from Shanghai, won again the women's Table Tennis Championships.

In 1991, Lei Li won the championship with the highest score in 65.7 kg-grade snatch and jerk at the 5th World Women's Weight Lifting Championships.

As top players of the Chinese National Team, Cao Huiying, Chen Zhaodi, Yang Xi, Yang Xilan and Li Yanjun, women players from the armed forces, won, together with other players of the National Women's Volley Ball Team, championships 5 times running respectively at the 3rd World Cup Women's Volley Ball Match in 1981, the 9th World Women's Volley Ball Championships in 1982, the 23rd Olympics Women's Volley Ball Match in 1984, the 4th World Cup Women's Volley Ball Match in 1985, and the 10th World Women's Championships in 1986.

In Oct, 1992, at the 2nd Women's Military Pentathlon Championships held by the International Military Sports Council in Switzerland, the Chinese Military Sports Delegation won the women's team title, and at the 2nd International Military Sports Competition, Shao Wenfang won the military pentathlon individual championship.

In 1993, at the World Shooting Competition, Li Duihong won the women's mobile pistol championship.

In 1994, at the International Military Sports Competition, Lu Fang and Wand Lianying won respectively the pistol individual championship and the military pentathlon individual championship.

In the same year, at the 7th World Swimming Championships, He Cihong won respectively with the scores of 1 "0"57, 2 '7"40, and 4 '1"67 the

women's 100-metre backstroke, 200-metre backstroke and 4x100 medley relay championships. Zhou Guanbin and Yue Ying won, with the score of 7 '57"96, the 4x 200 relay championship and Shan Ying and Yue Ying won, with the score of 3 '37"91, the 4x100 relay championship.

The women artists in the armed forces were the first in paying visits abroad on behalf of the state as messengers of peace. In 1960, Xu Youguang, a soprano singer of the Sing and Dance Ensemble of the General Political Department, paid a visit to Korean folk songs as Ar Lilang at the front of the Korean People's Army, the troops stationed at the front presented the Chinese singer with their highest honour: they conferred on her the title of "Model Fighter" and named a squad after her. The Russian songs and Mexican songs she performed also followed her footsteps to many European countries and were imprinted on the minds of the peoples there.

Zuohala Shahemayiwa was one of the first generation of minority dancers trained in the armed forces after the founding of the Republic. The dances she performed, being at once graceful, free and easy, had very strong artistic appeal. Besides, she was known for performing the dances created by herself. In the 50's, on behalf of the cultural and artistic circles of the state and the armed forces, Zuohala, Su Shenglan and some other performers of the General Political Department paid many visits to over 20 European, Asian and African and African nations. Zuohala was awarded respectively the Ethiopian King's Gold Prize, the Polish Government's Gold Cross, the Romanian Government's Gold Star Medal, and the Czechoslovakian Fucik Medal. In 1956, the Gauze Kerchief Dance and the Plate Dance she performed both won silver medals at the 6th World Youth Festival.

In 1958, Wang Xiaotang, a young actress of the August First Film Studio, won the Young Performers' Prize at the Karlovy Vary International Film Festival because of her outstanding performance in Beaconfire in a Stockaded Border Village.

In Jan. 1990, the 13th "Tomorrow" World Acrobatics Megagame and the 4th "Future" World Acrobatics Megagame were held in Paris, France. Fifty-six items from 19 countries contended intensely. The one who won the first gold prize of the "Future" World Acrobatics Megagame—the President of the French Republic Prize—was Xiao Mili, a merely 9-year-old Chinese performer. The prize-winning item she performed was Jujitsu Turning the Blanket, the performance of which also won her the Youngest Performer Prize awarded by the Soviet "Lenin Foundation." Xiao Mili was a little performer of the Soldiers' Acrobatic Troupe of the same year, the Political Department of the Guangzhou Military Command awarded her a Citation for Merit, First Class. Premier Li Peng cordially called her "National Treasure." The ones who brought back the highest prize of the Monte Carlo International Circus Festival—the

Gold Clown Prize-were Xiao Mili's companions Chen Xiaojie and Zhu Weili. That competition was one that reflected the highest level of acrobatics and circus in the present world. That year both of them were 12. The director and coach of the prize-winning item Carrying a Stack of Bowls on Double Parts they performed was the 45-year-old woman artist Gao Wenxiu of the Soldiers' Acrobatic Troupe of the Guangzhou Military Command. Born in an old and well-known acrobatic family, Gao began to practice art at the age of 5 and at 6 she began to perform on the stage with her family members Carrying a Stack of Bowls. At 11, she entered the Soldiers' Acrobatic Troupe of the Guangzhou Military Command with her art and played the leading role in Carrying a Stack of Bowls. Later, injured as a result of carelessness, she turned into a coach instead. She transferred her artistic dream into training a new generation of artists. Carrying a Stack of Bowls on Double Parts, creatively produced by Gao Wenxiu thanks to her accumulation of many years' artistic practice, blended art, technique, enjoyment, and aesthetics into one, thus raising the item to a higher level from its traditional basis. In 1993, Gao burst into tears upon hearing the announcement of the highest-prize winner by the organizing committee of the festival.

In 1994, the "Sound of Asia" International Popular Singers' Grand Prix was held in Alamutu. Bai Xue, a young performer of the Sing and Dance Ensemble of the General Political Department, and Fan Chunmei, a young performer from the Art Troupe of the Political Department of the Air Force, both won first prizes.

On the international book market, works by women writers of the Chinese armed forces also have their place. Tie Zhuwei, a woman writer of the Literary and Artistic Production Section of the Nanjing Military Command is known for writing full-length biographies. She has published, from a unique viewpoint and with rarely known material, *The Heavier the Frost, the Stronger the Colour*, *One Person and One City*, and completed jointly with others *The Red Army Romance*, *Biography of Chen Yi*, *The Biography of Liao Chengzhi* and *A Peasant Entrepreneur*, all six of which are full-length biographies. The full-length documentary film *Zhou Enlai*, the caption of which she wrote, had over 700 copies released both at home and abroad. *The Biography of Liao Chengzhi*, the title of which was written by Deng Xiaoping, will be translated into English and Japanese and distributed both at home and abroad. In Oct. 1988, Yu Jin, Tie's comrade-in-arms, brought forth *Adversity*, a full-length reportage, which presents a genuine description of the solemn and stirring history of the prisoners of war of the Chinese People's Volunteers during the War to Resist U.S. Aggression and Aid Korea. The book was published in Hongkong in 1990. Another full-length reportage written by her, *Shanghai-1949: Great Collapse*, presents the historical vicissitudes in politics, economy

and military affairs of China in the latter half of the 40's of the present century and the evolution of the decline and fall of the Kuomintang and the growth and rise of the Communist Party. In 1995, the book was also placed in the bookshelves of Hongkong.

Compared with Xiao Mili, Chen Xiaojie and those like them, the 62-year-old Deng Rongxian, a research fellow of the Academy of Military Medical Science, is as old as their grandmothers, and yet it was at such an advanced age that Deng Rongxian stepped in 1989 onto the WHO platform dealing with work of chemotherapy of malaria and gave a report on the various data and properties of the new anti-malaria drug-Benflumetol-which she designed and whose research and development she directed. It had a cure rate of over 95% when used to treat pernicious malaria, was easy to produce, low in price, and insignificant in the production of three wastes and in toxicity. The experts present were all astonished and all convinced. According to the WHO statistics, the yearly incidence of malaria was as high as 200 million people, of which life-endangering pernicious malaria accounted for 80%. The search for a new anti-malaria drug became, therefore, a major problem demanding prompt solution in the field of medical sciences and public health. This hard nut was cracked by the Chinese scientists. With their new anti-malaria drug-Benflumetol, Deng Rongxian and her colleagues won a first-class army-level award for achievements in science and technology and a first-class national prize for invention. People knew only that she carried away a bright pearl from the pharmaceutical crown; they were rarely aware that the process of picking the pearl was one of about 20 years' struggle, a challenge which involved innumerable failures. In this silent and monotonous process, the young girls working with her found white hairs on their heads and she herself turned from a "mainstay" in the prime of life into a white-haired and valetudinarian old lady.

On the rugged path of science, the flowers of success do not blossom earlier because its opponents are female. In this contest of human wisdom, there are more people who put in a lot of hard work without ever smelling the fragrance of the flowers.

Long Chenghua, an army doctor at the Department of Physiotherapy of the General Hospital of the Guangzhou Military Command, and her husband Wey Zheng, director of the Orthopaedical Department, devoted themselves to the study of cervical vertebra diseases from 1959 onwards, but it was not until after their retirement did they carry back from America the gold prize of the "Life Force" Cup Grand Prix of Papers on Traditional Medicines in the world.

Since we entered the latter half of the 20th century, the contest of world military affairs has been turning more and more intellect-oriented as a result of high-tech development. On this

battlefield free of the smoke of gunpowder can also be seen Chinese women with yellow complexion, black eyes and long hair.

Geneva, Switzerland, March 1991. In the hall of the Spiez NC-Chemical Laboratory, people anxiously awaited the assessments of the second of comparison experiments related to international chemical disarmament. When the results were announced and the China lab report #6 ranked first, all those present cast their admiring eyes towards a reserved Chinese woman expert. She was Zhong Yuzheng, an analytical chemistry professor at the PLA Antichemical Warfare Command Engineering Institute under the Headquarters of the General Staff. The participants were once more surprised at the charm and talent of Zhong when she stood on the rostrum presenting the academic paper in correct and fluent English. The experiments were organized by the Special Committee for Chemical Weapons under the United Nations Disarmament Commission. This was China's first participation. The degree of difficulty of such experiments was unusually high, and there was only one month for the whole process from opening the samples to completing reports on the experiments. A battle without firearms thus began. The Chinese delegation led by Zhong Yuzheng tackled the difficult problems involving high technology with not very advanced instruments and even with rather primitive methods. They worked day and night. Eventually a 206-page lab report in English came out of Zhong Yuzheng's typewriter and was submitted to the International Disarmament Commission on schedule. Thereafter, the three typical sample processing methods included in the comprehensive technical reports issued by the UN Special Committee of Chemical Disarmament were all devised by Chinese experts. In addition, some 22% of the illustrative plates were also devised by the Chinese delegation. Participants in the meeting called for all countries to adopt China's methods as an example for future experiments, and the report of the Chinese delegation was printed in the form of booklets recommended to the other 15 countries participating in the experiments. Zhong Yuzheng thus won the first battle. Afterwards, she led a delegation of Chinese chemical experts to the 3rd and then the 4th rounds of comparison experiments of international disarmament and likewise won outstanding successes.

The Chinese women military scientists began to attract special world attention. This was not only the pride of the Chinese servicewomen but also a symbol of the leap of the Chinese women as a whole.

TWENTIETH-CENTURY  
CHINESE SERVICEWOMEN  
二十世纪中国女兵



\* Chairman Mao Zedong writes an autograph as a memento for Liu Xiuzhen, a representative of the Chinese People's Volunteers, at the Third Session of the First Chinese People's Political Consultative Conference in 1951

\* Deng Xiaoping, former chairman of the Central Military Commission, receives in Beidaihe in Aug. 1998 servicewomen of a long-distance exchange station of a certain unit of the telecommunications troops under the Headquarters of the General Staff.

\* Jiang Zemin, chairman of the Central Military Commission, calls on all the servicewomen at a long-distance exchange company of a certain unit of the Shenyang Military Command on June 17, 1995 (photo by Jiang Zhishun)

## Section 1

1. Ceremony for a new term at the Wuhan Branch Campus of the Huangpu Military Academy (1927)
2. Group photo of the Women's Company of the Wuhan Branch Campus (1927)
3. Political instructor of the Women's Company Zhong Fuguang (1927)
4. Song Qingling reviews the Northern Expeditionary Revolutionary Army at Gankou (New Year's Day of 1927)
5. He Xiangning (1957)
6. Cai Chang at the Second Conference of the C.P.P.C.C. (1950)
7. Deng Yingchao and Zhou Enlai together with members of the Awakening Society, an organization of progressive youth in Tianjin (1920)
8. Song Qingling and Sun Yat-sen in Guangzhou (New Year's Day of 1924)
9. Mark of the Iron Army headed by Ye Ting (1926)
10. A woman cadet of the Military Academy Zhang Ruihus (1938)
11. A diploma of the Women's Company of the Wuhan Branch Campus

## Section 2

12. Director of the Organization Department of the Second Front Red Army Li Zhen and her bodyguard Yang Dexiu (1935)
13. Women's Delegation of the Workers' and Peasants' Red Army at the First National Conference of Soviet Deputies. Back row from the left; Kang Keqing, Qian Xi, Zhou Yuelin and He Zizhen; front row from the left: Zeng Bi and Peng Ru (1931)
14. Commander of the Women's Working and Fighting Battalion of the Red Army Lin Yueqin
15. Some Red Army women cadres after the Long March. From the left: Chen Congying, Cai Chang, Xia Ming and Liu Ying
16. Women cooks of the fourth Front Red Army help the soldiers mend clothes

17. Red Armywoman Kang Keqing (photo by Haldore Hansen)
18. Kang Keqing and He Zizhen in the Red Army

### Section 3

19. Female Red Guards at Hainandao Island
20. Zhang Qiuqin after the Red Army's Long March(1936)
21. Dean of Studies of the Chinese Women's University Zhang Qiuqin(1939)
22. Zhang Qiuqin, rescued from the Kuomintang's "Capital Self-Examination House." From the left; Zhang Qiuqin, Xia Zhixu, and Xiong Tianjing; The front row from the right; Wo Zhonglian, Shuai Mengqi and others in the Nanjing office of the Eighth Route Army (August 1937)
23. Zhang Qiuqin together with Liu Shalqi, Deng Yingchao and Cai Chang (March 1949)

### Section 4

24. Wang Xinlan in the 115th Division of the Eighth Route Army(1939)
25. Red Armywoman Jian Xianren
26. Men and women nursed of a medical team of the Red Army (photo by Edgar Snow in 1937)
27. Women nurses in the Red Army
28. The Youth Vanguard of the Soviet Factory (photo by Edgar Snow in 1937)

### Section 5

29. Li Bozhao in Yan'an (1939)
30. Li Bozhao (fourth left) together with students of Yat-sen University in Moscow Liu Puqing (first left), Zhang Qiuqin (fourth right) and Shen Zemin (second right), etc. (in the winter of 1927 in Moscow)
31. Wei Gongzhi (1949)
32. Red Machine Dance by a Red Army troupe (photo by Edgar Snow in 1937)
33. United Front Dance (photo by Edgar Snow in 1937)

### Section 6

34. Ding Ling and the Northwest Battlefield Service Corps of the 18th Group Army headed by her (1937)
35. When the Children's Theatrical Troupe depart from the office of the Eighth Route Army, Deng Yingchao and others see them off at the gate (Feb. 1938)
36. Yunnan Women's Battlefield Service Corps are taking a rest during

- the journey of marching towards Tai'erzhuang
37. The Art Troupe of the Fifth War Zone(1937)
  38. Women's Self-Defense Group are having a firing practice during the War of Resistance Against Japan
  39. Servicewomen of the First Route Army of the Northeast Anti-Japanese Allied Forces
  40. Servicewomen of the New Fourth Army are having a wall-climbing drill
  41. Servicewomen of the Qiongya Anti-Japanese Column
  42. Servicewomen of the 120th Division of the Eighth Route Army that took part in the Qihui Battle(April 1939)
  43. Women cadres of the 115th Division of the Eighth Route Army(1944)
  44. The Eighth Route Army servicewomen fighting in the Taihanhshan Mountains together with the commander in chief Zhu De
  45. The Eighth Route Army servicewomen are reclaim-ing wasteland
  46. Servicewomen of the 120th Division of the Eighth Route Army are making hemp ropes by themselves between battles
  47. Servicewomen of the 359th Brigade of the Eighth Route Army are spinning threads
  48. Eighth Route Army servicewomen of the Second Sub-Unit in north China are rushing the work of garment making
  49. Secretary-general of the Political Department of the Shandong Column of the Eighth Route Army Wu Zhonglian(first left)together with director of the Organization Department, director of the Defense Department and chief of the Fighting Section of the Political Department during a battle in east Shandong(1940)
  50. Chen Shaomin together with commander of the 5th Division of the New Fourth Army Li Xiannian(first right) and representative of the East China Bureau Zheng Weisan(1943)
  51. During the bombardment of Chongqing by the Japanese troops, confidential personnel at the agency of the Eighth Route Army continued to work in the field. Here shows them eating in the field.
  52. Women doctors of the New Fourth Army. From the Left; Zheng Suwen, Zhao Guobao, Zhang Wan, Jin Ding and Mao Zheng
  53. Medical workers of an Eighth Route Army hospital in Yan'an at work
  54. Women students of a New Fourth Army hygienics training class Chen Qiyang (second left )and Chen Bing (fourth left) (photo by army commander of the New Fourth Army Ye Ting)
  55. Students of the third hygienics training class of the New Fourth Army at drill,with the Person on the left front being Zheng Jinxia
  56. The meteorological training class of the 3rd Division of the New Fourth Army graduate (Setp.20,1945)

## Section 7

57. The New Fourth Army servicewomen at the headquarters in the South of the Yangtse River. From the left; Zhang Xi, Luo XI, Chen Mo and Chu Qing (photo by Chen Yi in the Spring of 1940)
58. The New Fourth Army servicewomen sing songs together with women of the Battlefield Service Corps. From the second right: Wang Yugeng, Li Min, Zhou Renhui and Zhang Xi (1939)
59. Little members of Xin'an Touring Party (photo by Zhang Aiping in 1994)
60. Servicewomen of the 8th Brigade of the 3rd Division of the New Fourth Army, with the first right being Deng Liujin (photo by Zhang Aiping in 1942)
61. Ding Ling in Yan'an (1938)
62. Ding Ling (second right front) and Kang Keqing (first left front) together with commander in chief Zhu De (third right back), deputy commander in chief Peng Dehuai (first right back) and Zuo Quan (first left back) in the general headquarters of the Eight Route Army's front (1938)
63. Ding Ling speaks at the gathering of Shaanxi women in commemoration of the International Working Women's Day (1938)
64. Ding Ling in a Japanese army overcoat (the overcoat, one of the war trophies of the 115th Division of the Eighth Route Army at the Pingxingguan Campaign, was given to her as a gift by the anti-Japanese general Yang Dezhi in 1937)
65. A poem written for Ding Ling by Mao Zedong (1936)
66. "Reflections on the March Eighth Women's Day" published in Liberation Daily in Yan'an (1942)

## Section 8

67. Group photo of Liao Bing (middle) with friends seeing her off for Yan'an when she passes Kuala Lumpur (1938)
68. Liao Bing together with a girl student from overseas of North Shaanxi Public School Chen Jiexin (1938)
69. Students of the Chinese Women's University are washing their faces at the side of a river
70. Women students of the 4th Group of the Anti-Japanese Military and Political College are learning to read and write in a valley of Yan'an
72. Women students of the Anti-Japanese Military and Political College are unpicking and washing cotton-padded clothes
73. Hao Zhiping in Yan'an (1938)
74. Students of the Chinese Women's University are weaving straw sandals
75. Women students of the Anti-Japanese Military and Political College

in front of a cave dwelling. Most of them became committee members of the National First-Aid Commission of Women

76. Cadres of the Women's Company of the Branch Campus at Taihangshan Mountain of the Anti-Japanese Military and Political College. From the left of the back row; political instructor Zhang Wen, platoon leader and associate political instructor Red Madder (hao Zhiping)(photo by vice-president of the Anti-Japanese Military and Political College Luo Ruiqing in 1940)

77. A student of the Chinese Women's University Xue Ming together with He Long, Lin Feng, Li Jingquan and Liao Hansheng in front of the office door of the CPC Northwest Bureau in Yan'an(1942)

78. Women students of the Anti-Japanese Military and Political College marching to the front

## Section 9

79. Working room of the editorial department of Liberation Daily in Yan'an (1943)

80. Interviewing and editing work conference of the Suzhong branch office of Xinhua News Agency. The second right of the second row is woman journalist Lin Zedong. After the conference, the people in the picture at once headed respectively for each of the war zones to interview the recapturing of the enemy-occupied areas and the acceptance of the Japanese invaders' surrender (August 1945)

81. Women staff members in the composing room of the Jin-Cha-Ji Pictorial

82. Luo Qiong and her husband Xue Muqiao (1937)

83. Liberation Daily's supplement "Chinese Women". the publication of which Luo Qiong supervised (1942)

84. Theoretical Works on women written by Luo Qiong

85. An inscription by Mao Zedong for the supplement Chinese Women (March 1942)

86. Zeng Ke on one of the army seats during the First National Conference of the C.P.P.C.C. (1949)

87. Yang Mo in Zhangjiakou in 1946

88. Little actress of the Enemy- Resisting Troupe Tian Hua together with the pioneer of the photographic cause in east Shanxi Lei Ye( photo by Sha Fei in 1942)

89. Woman director Wang Ping

90. Han Zi in a machine gun bunker of the Chinese volunteers in Korea(1952)

## Section 10

91. Li Dinglan (front) leads a medical team in rescuing the wounded at the frontline (1948)
92. Ding Zhihui heads for Korea to take Part in the war as deputy director of the north China's Korea-aiding medical operational group (1951)
93. Guo Junqing and commander in chief Zhu De (Sept. 1950)
94. Woman medical officer Wang Yingqiang (front) of Jiangnan Military , though pregnant for several months, still rushes to carry the wounded soldiers at the frontline. When the battle ended, Wang Yingqiang had a miscarriage (1948)
95. Yang Ling on the enemy tank captured during the East Henan Campaign (photo by Kang Maozhao in 1948)
96. Woman interpreter of the East China Field Army Zhu Qing (first right) accompanies Marshall, Zhang Zhizhong and Chen Yi in their inspection of Jinan, Shandong (photo by Long Shi on March 2, 1946)
97. Woman journalist Ge Yang interviews the Kuomintang representatives of the executive group of the Military Mediation Section (photo by Kang Maozhao in 1946)
98. Servicewomen of the Art Troupe of the 3rd Field Army spend the New Year's Day of 1949 in a trench
99. Servicewomen of the Art Troupe of the 2nd Field marching towards the Southwest
100. Servicewomen of the Art Troupe are seeing off the 99th Sub-unit on their long journey at Puzhen Railway Station during the marching towards the big Southwest
101. Liu Ping, a cadre of the Organization Department under the Political Department of the 19th Corps, and Jin Lan at the troops' station after the liberation of Xi'an (1950)
102. Servicewomen of the Art Troupe of the Northwest Field Army are washing blood-stained clothes for the wounded during the Libei Campaign
103. Servicewomen stride across the Gobi Desert on foot during the marching towards Xinjiang (Oct. 1949)
104. Servicewomen of the 18th Army distribute leaflets to the masses after reaching Tibet(1953)
105. Servicewomen marching towards Tibet are transporting food on the Xianren Bridge
106. Servicewomen of the PLA attending the land reform

## Section 11

107. Women volunteers marching towards the Korean battlefields (1951)
108. Women volunteers cutting trees in the forest to construct air-raid shelters

- 109. Women volunteers cutting through the dense forest
- 110. The Art Troupe of the 47th Army of the Chinese People's Volunteers is performing for the soldiers in an air-raid shelter
- 111. Women volunteers collect firewood in the snow to warm themselves
- 112. Woman volunteer Xu Xiuyun is rescuing the wounded at the battlefield
- 113. The first batch of tankwomen(1952)
- 114. Broadcasting-to-the -Enemy Station at the front
- 115. Xie Xiumei, a member of the returned Volunteers' delegation, asks Mao Zedong for his autograph
- 116. Women volunteers together with a Korean aunt

## Section 12

- 117. A picture of Young men's clothing(1927)
- 118. Martyr Xiang Jingyu, the earliest leader of women's movement in China. She once served as head of the Central Women's Association, was captured in 1928 and laid down her life the same year in Wuhan
- 119. He Chunying. She joined the Communist Youth League in 1927 and died in Hankou in the spring of 1930 at the age of 18 only.
- 120. In March 1928, servicewoman Chen Tiejun and her comrade-in-arm Zhou Wenyong held their wedding ceremony on the execution ground. At the final moment of her life, Chen Tiejun, gazing at Zhou Wenyong who shared life and death with her, spoke at the top of her voice: "Dear fellow countrymen! Sisters! Comrade ZhouWenyong's and my blood is about to be shed here. For the interests of the revolution,we couldn't give consideration to personal love affairs. Today, I'd like to announce to all: We're about to hold our wedding ceremony. Let the shots of the reactionaries be the salute to our wedding. Comrades, goodbye for ever! The future is ours!" The news of their death and their group photo of before the execution were published in several daily papers of Hongkong and in a well-known Japanese newspaper.
- 121. Woman commanding officer Hu Jun
- 122. Xiang Qin, who was blown up to death by the Japanese troops when withdrawing from Wuhan
- 123. Woman student of the Anti-Japanese Military and Political College Liu Yaling, who died in Feb. 1942 when the Japanese troops mopped up Taihangshan Mountain
- 124. An overseas Chinese from Indonesia Li Lin
- 125. Head of the Women's Rescue Commission of the Luyu Village of Fuping Liu Yuemei, who was cut to pieces during the big "mopping up" in 1943 (photo by Ye Manzhi)

## Section 13

126. Martyr Mao Liying
127. Letters left behind by martyr Mao Liying
128. Martyr Sun Xiaomei
129. Martyr Feng Helan
130. Original handwriting of letters written by Feng Helan to her elder sister before death
131. Zhao Yiman in martial attire
132. Zhao Yiman and her child before the former's death
133. Martyr Jiang Zhujun

#### Section 14

134. On March 8, 1952, commander in chief Zhu De, after supervising personally the ceremony of going up to the sky by the first batch of aviatrixes. has a group photo with them
135. On March 24, 1953, Mao Zedong, Zhou Enlai and Liu Shaoqi receive in Zhongnanhai the first batch of aviatrixes
136. Wu Xiumei, one of the first batch of aviatrixes and deputy chief of staff of a certain aviation school of the Air Force (photo by Tan Xiande in 1984)
137. The first woman test pilot Zhang Yumei (photo by Tan Xiande in 1994)
138. Aviatrixes at drill (photo by Tan Xiande)
139. Associate division commander of a certain division of the Air Arm Yue Xicui and aviatrix Cheng Xiaojian, a deputy to the 8th National People's Congress (photo by Tan Xiande in 1988)
140. Meritorious aviatrix of the Air Force, associate political commissar of a certain division and deputy to the 7th National People's Congress Liu Xiaolian together with the little actors and actresses of the Blue Sky Kindergarten of the Air Force (photo by Tan Xiande)
141. The 6th batch of aviatrixes (photo by Tan Xiande)
142. Qin Guifang, one of the 1st batch of aviatrixes (fourth right), tells the 5th batch of aviatrixes about the revolutionary tradition (photo by Tan Xiande in 1981)
143. Another batch of aviatrixes fly up to the blue skies (photo by Tan Xiande)
144. Out of the cabin (photo by Zhang Lianfu)
145. Parachuting servicewomen between drills (photo by Zhang Lianfu)
146. Blooming in the air (photo by Zhang Lianfu)

#### Section 15

147. Flah raising on the medical ship the Nankang (photo by WangHong)



- 148. Rescue training at sea (photo by Wang Hong)
- 149. Returning to port (photo by Wang Hong)
- 150. Saluting in a line on the deck during a visit to Russia with a formation of warships. (The first left is Song Zhuying, May 1994)
- 151. Fan Linlin gives her autograph to the soldiers during a performance in the armed forces with a troupe (1994)

## Section 16

- 152. General Li Zhen(1955)
- 153. Group photo of secretary-general of the Political Department of the Chinese People's Volunteers Li Zhen (second left ) and her husband Gan Siqi (third left) together with commander in chief of the Chinese People's volunteers Peng Dehuai (fifth left), commanding officer of the Corps Chen Geng (sixth left) and others at the Korean frontline (1951)
- 154. Li Zhen and Mao Zedong (photo by Wang Feng in 1959)
- 155. Lieutenant general Nie Li(Photo by Jiang Zhishun in 1994)
- 156. Major general Liao Wenhai(1998)
- 157. Major general Hu Feipei(1998)
- 158. Major general Wu Xiaoheng(1998)
- 159. Major general Li Xikai(1998)
- 160. Major general Qiao Peijuan(photo by Yu Ginqun in 1995)
- 161. Major general Zhao Zhiwen (photo by Wang An-min in 1995)
- 162. Major general Peng Gang (photo by Jiang Zhishun in 1995)
- 163. Major general Deng Xianqun (photo by Jiang Zhishun in 1994)
- 164. Major general He Jiesheng (photo by Zeng Fanxiang in 1995)
- 165. Major general Wang Xiaotang (photo by Jiang Zhishun in 1994)
- 166. Major general Zhong Yuzheng (photo by Jiang Zhishun in 1993)
- 167. Major general Chao Fuhuan (photo by Zhao Jinwu in 1995)

## Section 17

- 168. Senior engineer Chen Lishqn (photo by Meng Lingjun)
- 169. Senior engineer Hua Ming (photo by Song Qinghai)
- 170. Senior engineer Lin Shuyun
- 171. Professor Li Xiaomei(middle) (photo by Tan Keyang)
- 172. Senior engineer Zhang Shufeng
- 173. Research fellow Qiu Aici (photo by Yang Jianguo)
- 174. Missile expert of the Tujia nationality He Huiwan (photo by Feng Gensuo)
- 175. "Inspecting officer" of strategic missiles He Yanfang
- 176. Senior engineer Wang Ju (photo by Zhang Jianguo) Yanfang
- 177. Daughter from a family of generals Liu Miqun (photo by Zhang Qijin)

178. Expert in the techniques of checking functions of garments Jiang Zhihua (photo by Li Shushen)
179. Expert in the studies of military equipment Liu Ximei (photo by in Shushen)
180. Senior engineer Sa Benmao
181. Research fellow on strategies at the Academy of Military Science Liu Xiaoying(photo by Jiang Wenming)
182. Research fellow of the Academy of Military Science Xu Xiaojun (photo by Uenming)
183. Research fellow Huang Cuifen (photo by Zhao Jinwu)
184. Deputy to the National People's Congress and president of the Naval Political Institute Xu Lili (photo by Long Yunhe)
185. A master of vocal music Peng Liyuan
186. Luo Li. a 24-year-old woman doctor of the Computer Science and Technology University (photo by Tan Keyang)
187. Xiao Wenbin, director of a research institute and of a factory (photo by Fan Guoqing)

## Section 18

188. In 1948 Zhang Qiuqin attended the Second Congress of the International Women's Federation as a member of the Chinese Women's Delegation in Budapest, capital of Hungary
189. Li Shulan(photo by Han Rongzhi in 1957)
190. Li Yamin, Dong Xiangyi and Du Ningshenh (photo by Jiang Zhushun in 1975)
191. Ma Yanhong
192. Tong Ling
193. Dai Lili
194. The Chinese Women's Volley Ball Team is engaged in a match. Here shows Yang Xilan
195. Fu Li
196. In Oct.1992 , the Chinese Delegation of Military Sports won he women's Military Pentathlon Championships of the International Military Sports Council. From the left of the middle row: Tian Feng, Wang Lianying and Shao WenFang
197. He Cihong
198. Ye Qiaobo, who has been conferred the title of "A Pathbreaker of the Sporting World" by the Military Commission of the Central Committee of the CPC (photo by Jiang Zhishun in 1993)
199. Dancing artist Zuohala
200. Soprano singer Xu Younuang
201. Jujitsu Turning the Blanket Performed by Xiao Mili (1990)
202. Acrobatics Carrying a Stack of Bowls on Double Parts (1993)

203. At a discussion meeting on Zhou Enlai, Deng Yingchao says to Tie Zhuwei: "You should write not only about Zhou Enlai's strong points but also about his weak points." (1988)
204. Yu Jin gathers material at the front of the War of Self-Defense against the Vietnamese(1985)
205. Long Cenghua(photo by Bai Xin)
206. Research fellow Deng Rongxian
207. Zhong Yuzheng in front of the International Conference Building of Geneva of Switzerland
208. Servicewomen of a long-distance exchange station of a certain unit of the telecommunications troops under the Headquarters of the General Staff(photo by Yang Ziheng in 1995)
209. The first formation of servicewomen in China's history of parades (photo by Zhang Tongsheng in 1982)

## 后 记

1988年作者在任《解放军报》社机动记者时，赴西藏拉萨采访

In 1988 the author gathered news in Lhasa, Tibet as a Correspondent of "P.L.A. Press".

当我给这本书划最后一个句号的时候，要说的话还有很多。

记得我正为保留书中的一些资料而万分苦恼的时候，电话铃响了。“你找我的事，我感到很难办，但是我给你找到了依据，在《中国大百科全书》，‘中国妇女’卷163页……我想，这是你需要的。”电话中人是聂力将军，我总是在遇到最棘手的问题时找她，我们之间并无私交，而她的帮助却是具体而亲切的，像个知心的朋友。1993年底，当我着手策划我本书的时候，除了有满脑子的想法，其余什么条件都不具备。我把要写这部书的想法说了，她立即打电话给有关部门表示了她的意见。1994年人大会议期间的一个晚上，她又找我去，详细听我谈这部书的大纲，直到晚上10点。同年盛夏，我在宿舍的电话录音机里，又听到了她的声音：“我是聂力，我马上要出差到外地，我很想知道你的那部书……”

这部书写得很难，还有很多意料不到的事……

我要感谢在上海的菡子老师，没有她的鼓励，这本书也许会消失在去年秋季我地苦涩和混乱的脑浆中了。在我采写的过程中，始终感到有一个身影在陪伴着我，那就是她，她已是年逾古稀的人了，她写信说，冬天的上海是阴冷的，她托人买了一台电脑，要用它再写一部关于女兵的书……我从她那里开始理解了真正的女兵。近一年中，我和她、她们在一起思索着、成长着……还有许许多多热爱和关心女兵的老前辈 林晖伯伯将自己收藏的关于新四女兵的资料都给我了，新穗阿姨也是倾其所有，傅秀阿姨与我多次彻夜长谈……面对他们，我深感羞愧。感谢他们给予我的历史知识和人生的教诲。

我要感谢总政组织部组织局的大力支持。

本书的第五部分，要感谢国防科工委、二炮、总参、总后、海军、空军政治部宣传部、文化部和总政文化部文艺局、体育局、总政干部部以及各军区文化部在资料和信息方面给予的大力支持。

在本书的制作中，有幸结识了刚从香港搬厂到广州增城市的印刷同业姚志明先生及他的同事冯义波先生，他们的敬业精神很使我感动。本书的印刷得到了他们的指点和无私的帮助。如果读者喜欢这本书，请不要忘记他们。

我还要感谢总后驻深圳办事处，他们伸出的友谊之手，给人温暖和信心。

本书的图片制作特请解放军报社高级记者江志顺，英文翻译特请解放军总医院军医进修学院英语教研室主任、英文博士曹精华，责任编辑特请解放军出版社总编室主任刘迪云，封面设计特请解放军著名画家袁正阳、仓小宝，这是一并表示感谢。

江 林

作 者

1995年5月 POSTSCRIPT

When I drew the final full stop to this book, I still had a lot

to say.

I won't forget that it was General Nie Li that I always turned to whenever I was confronted with the most knotty problems in the course of compiling the book. There was no personal friendship between us, and yet with her specific and kind help, she was like a cordial friend. At the end of 1993, when I set about planning the book, I was lacking in every other condition except that I was full of ideas. I ventured to dial a phone number given to me by a friend and heard her voice from the phone: "This is Nie Li." Upon hearing my ideas about the writing of the book, she at once phoned the relevant department and expressed her own opinions. One evening during the National People's Congress in 1994, she came to me again and inquired in detail about the outline of the book till ten o'clock at night. In the midsummer of the same year, I again heard her voice from the phone recorder in my house: "This is Nie Li. I'm about to go away on business. I'd very much like to know about that book of yours..."

I'm grateful to my mentor Han Zi far away in Shanghai. Without her encouragement, the book might have disappeared within my anguished and confused brains autumn. In the whole process of my interviews and writing, I felt constantly accompanied by a figure. It was she, a woman who is over 70. She said in her letter that Shanghai in winter was gloomy and cold, and that she had a computer bought for her and was going to write another book on servicewomen with it ... It was from her that I began to understand what a genuine servicewoman was like. For about a year, I pondered and matured together with her and those like her... There are many other elders who helped me in one way or another. Uncle Lin Hui turned over to me all the data he had collected about servicewomen in the New Fourth Army; Aunt Xin Sui also turned over to me everything relevant she had; and Aunt Fu Xiu talked with me all night long for many times ... I felt very much ashamed in their face. I'm greatly indebted to them for the knowledge of history and teachings on life they offered me.

I'd also like to express my thanks to the Organization Bureau of the Organization under the General Political Department.

My thanks should also go to the following units for their energetic support in the provision of data and information: Propaganda Departments under the Political Departments of the Commission of Science, Technology and Industry for National Defense, the Second Artillery Troops, the Headquarters of General Staff, the General Logistics Department, the Navy and the Air Force; the Literature and Art Bureau and the Physical Culture Bureau of the General Political Department; the Cadre Department under the General Political Department, as well as the Literature and Art Departments under various military commands.

I was lucky to associate with a Printing expert Mr. Yiu Chi Ming and his partner Mr. Fung Yi Bo whose printing house just moved from Hongkong to Zengcheng City, Guangdong Province. Many thanks for their selfless assistance in book editing and printing. Let's remember them when we read this book.

The sight of entertaining guests in Shenzhen agency of the General Logistics Department warmed my heart and let me have full faith that I shall succeed.

Jiang Zhishun, a senior correspondent of the People's Liberation Army Newspaper Office, was specially invited for the photo production of the book; Cao Jinghua, a Ph.D. in British and American Literature and director of the Teaching and Research Section of the PLA General Hospital and Military Postgraduate Medical College, was specially invited for the English translation of the book; Liu Diyun, director of the General Editorial Department of the PLA Publishing Press, was specially invited as responsible editor; and Yuan Zhengyang and Cang Xiaobao, well-known painters of the PLA Newspaper Office, were specially invited as cover designers. Here I'd like to express my gratitude to them all.

JIANGLIN

Author

May 1995

